

San Diego Book of Ancestors

*Not to know what happened before we were born is to remain perpetually a child.
For what is the worth of a human life unless it is woven into
the life of our ancestors by the records of history?
- Marcus Tullius Cicero, 106-43 B.C.*

Tragedy. Excitement. Mystery. Leadership. Humor. Romance. Risk. Coincidence. These are the components that flesh out the bare bone facts of our forefathers in the biographies that follow. Lincoln said, "I am not so interested in who my grandfather was as much as in what his grandson can become."

And this becomes one of the great paradoxes of America. For we, particularly, are greatly interested in our grandparents and ancestors, and the disparate ways that they contributed to the culture and period in our nation's history when we broke free from England's yoke and became a democracy, the United States of America.

In the 1990s the idea of a Book of Ancestors evolved within our San Diego Town Committee. Through the years, several members contributed greatly to making this living document exactly what it is today. The Colonial History Study Group took on this project followed by The Writers' Circle. Currently, the Ancestor Book Committee continues this on-going project, making it available to each and every one of you on-line.

In addition, the California Society of Colonial Dames has begun another on-going project which they named "Finding Your Cousins by Colony". Our cousins will be consolidated by colony and ancestor, followed by our California cousins from each town committee. John Howland of MA is one example of this project:

[Howland, John](#) c.1592-1673 MA

Biography in San Diego Town Committee's and Colorado State Society's' BOA

1. Clarkson, Ms. Courtney Schuyler N. Cal., 11th in descent.
2. Humphreys, Mrs. Richard Dwight [Carolyn] MP, 12th in descent.
3. Hygelund, Mrs. Jill Christian N. Cal., 12th in descent.
4. Hygelund, Ms. Anna Christine N. Cal., 13th in descent.
5. Meyer, Mrs. Dean Nordman [Shirley] N. Cal., 10th in descent.
6. Meyer, Ms. Susan Ann Cal., 11th in descent.
7. Ridland, Mrs. Alexander C. [Marilyn] N. Cal., NR 10th in descent.

Explore and savor a random collection of insights that just might tingle your spine and create a warm feeling in your soul as well as enable you to connect with other descendants and share what you know with your Colonial Dame cousins.

-The Ancestor Book Committee

Click on one of the following:

Thirteen Original Colonies Introduction

New England Colonies

Middle Colonies

Southern Colonies

or

Biographies Listed by Colonies:

Connecticut

Delaware

Georgia

Maryland

Massachusetts

Maine

New Hampshire

New Jersey

New York

North Carolina

Pennsylvania

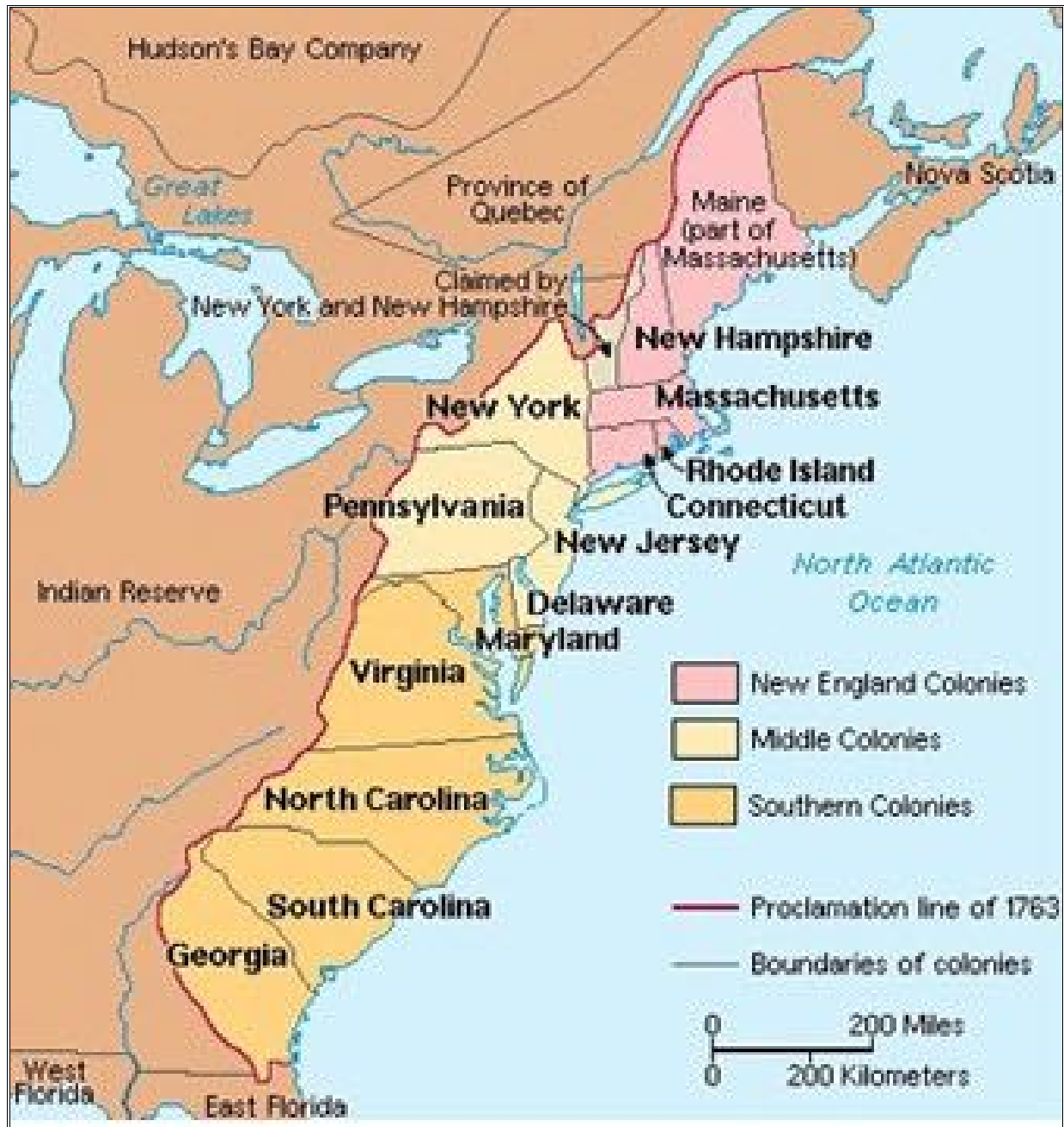
Rhode Island

South Carolina

Virginia

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Thirteen Original Colonies Introduction



<http://traildawgs.blogspot.com/p/original-thirteen-colonies-marathon.html>

The Thirteen Colonies were the colonies on the Atlantic coast of North America, starting with Virginia in 1607 and ending with Georgia in 1733. The colonies were Delaware, Pennsylvania, New Jersey, Georgia, Connecticut, Massachusetts Bay, Maryland, South Carolina, New Hampshire, Virginia, New York, North Carolina, and Rhode Island and

Providence Plantations. Each colony developed its own system of self-government. Americans were mostly independent farmers who owned their own land and voted for their local and provincial government.

New England Colonies

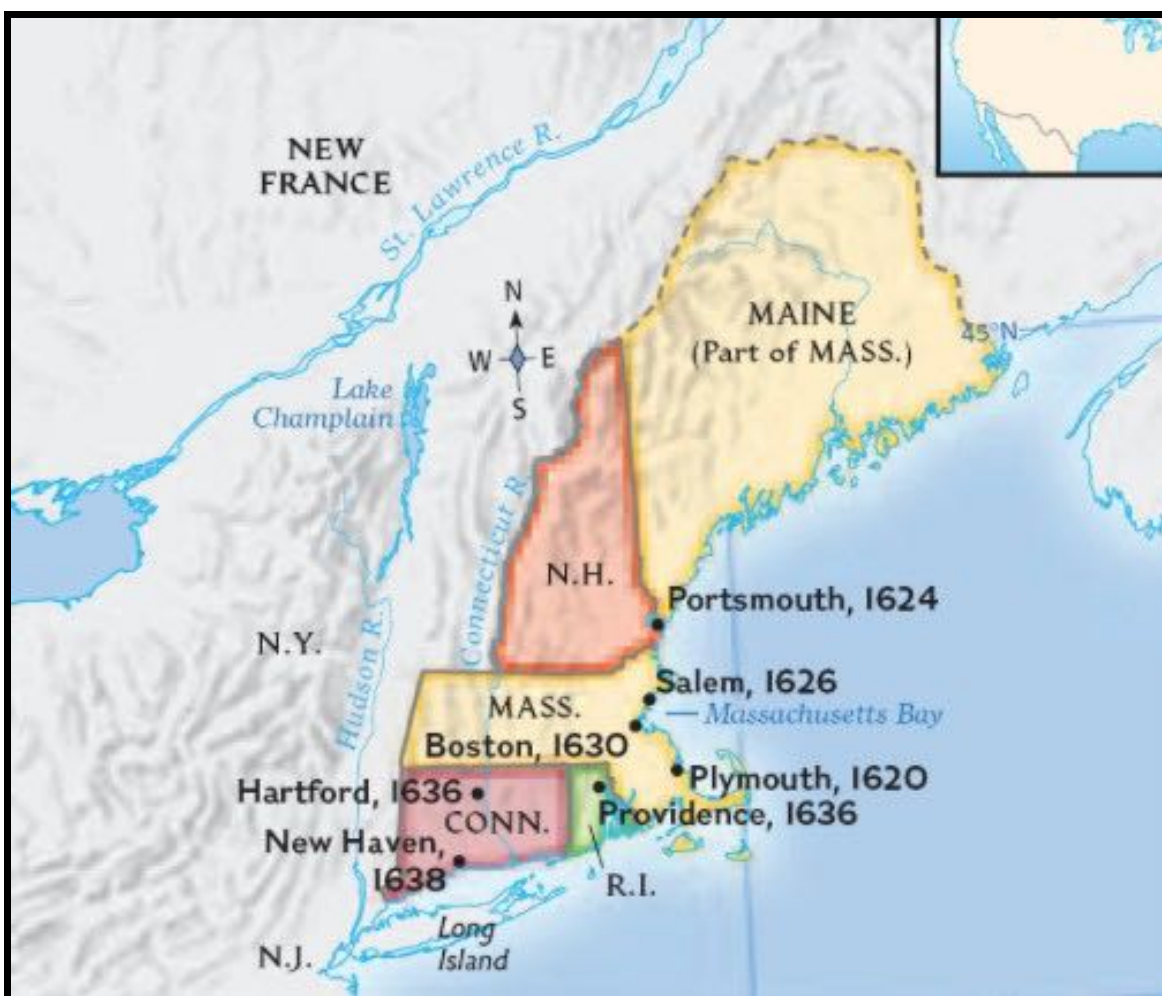
Middle Colonies

Southern Colonies

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

New England Colonies



<http://mrs mertens.pbworks.com/w/page/36753645/Chapters%205%20and%206%20-%20Colonial%20America>

The designation of colonial New England included colonies of New Hampshire, Massachusetts Bay, Rhode Island and Connecticut.

Two small proprietary colonies were set up - one in New Hampshire and one in Maine. New Hampshire was not truly a separate province from Massachusetts until after 1691.

Connecticut was formed as a migration from the Massachusetts colony. The original settlements were along the Connecticut River at Hartford, Windsor and Wethersfield. New Haven was settled separately, but all joined together as Connecticut, in 1662. A code of laws was drawn up, beginning with penal laws, which were actually borrowed from the

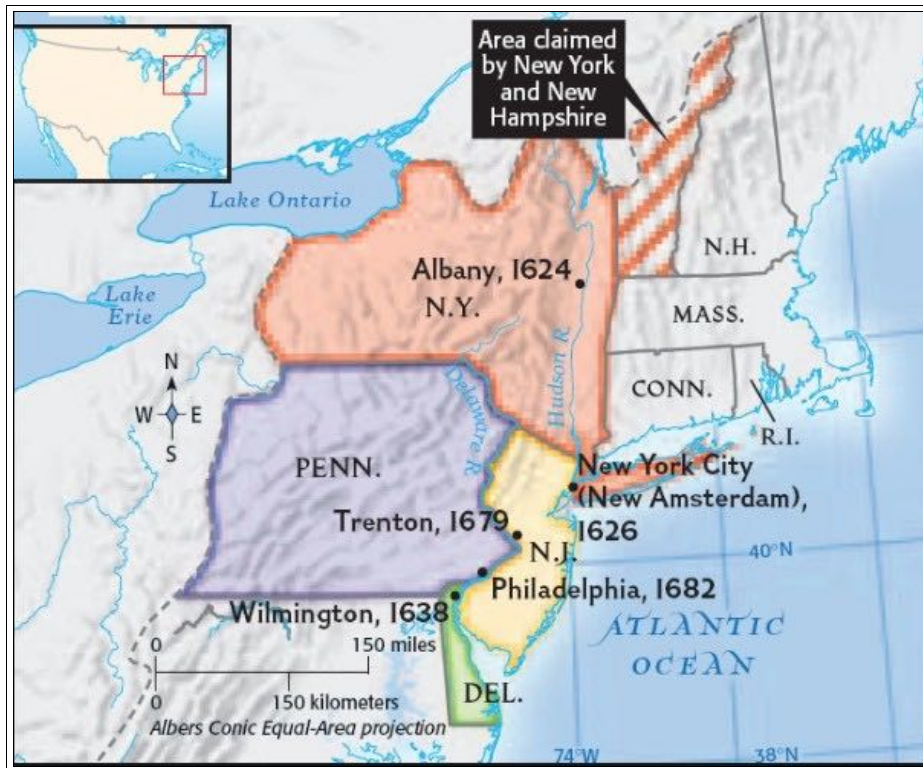
Bible. Like Rhode Island, this colony's history in this century is bound to that of Massachusetts, in the Confederation.

- US History, Chapter 3, Boundless website

Return to Thirteen Original Colonies Introduction

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

Middle Colonies



National Geographic
- US History, Chapter 3, Boundless website

The Middle Colonies, consisting of the present-day states of New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, and Delaware, were characterized by a large degree of diversity—religious, political, economic, and ethnic. The Dutch colony of New Netherland was taken over by the British and renamed New York, but large numbers of Dutch remained in the colony. New Jersey began as a division of New York, and was for a time divided into the proprietary colonies of East and West Jersey.

[Return to Thirteen Original Colonies Introduction](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

Southern Colonies



National Geographic
- US History, Chapter 3, Boundless website

The colonial South included the plantation colonies of the Chesapeake region and the lower South. The first attempted English settlement south of Virginia was the Province of Carolina. It was a private venture, financed by a group of English Lords Proprietors who hoped that a

new colony in the south would become profitable like Jamestown. Carolina was not settled until 1670, and even then the first attempt failed because there was no incentive for emigration to that area. Eventually, however, the Lords combined their remaining capital and financed a settlement mission to the area. The expedition located fertile and defensible ground at what was to become Charleston, thus beginning the English colonization of the mainland.

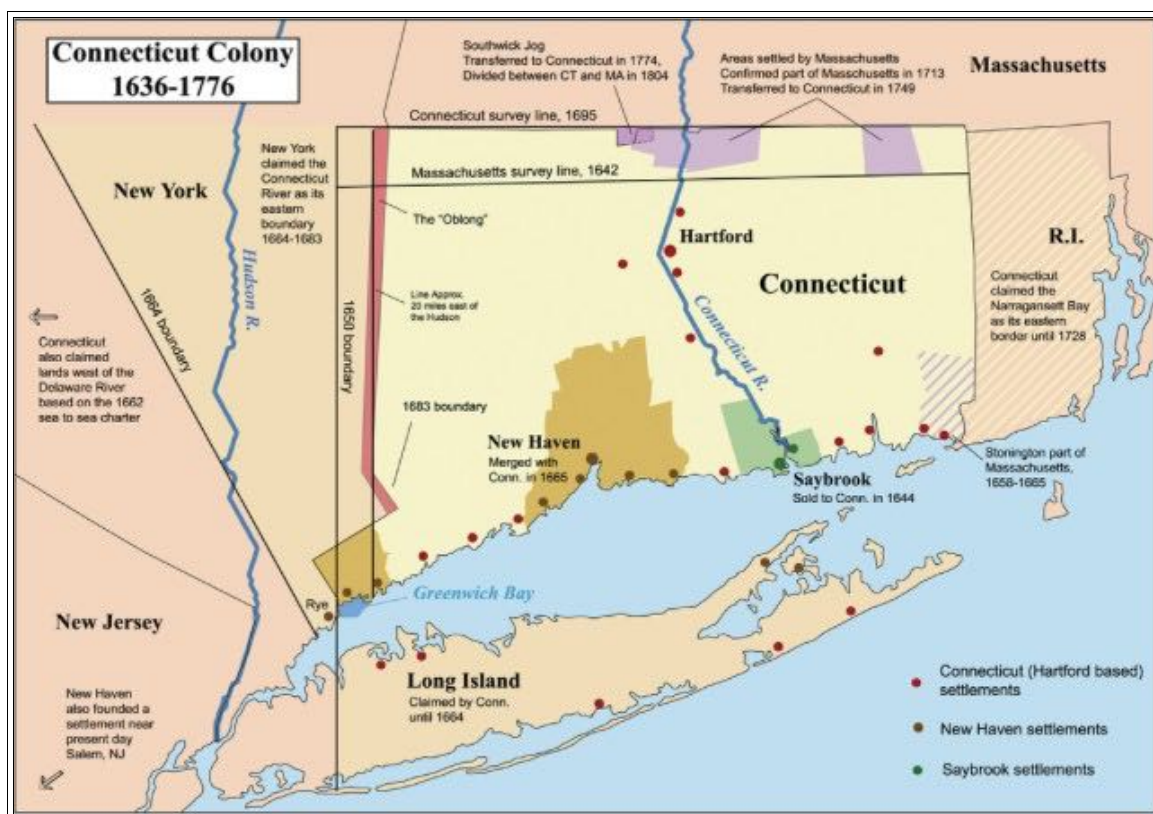
The original settlers in South Carolina established a lucrative trade in provisions, deerskins, and Indian captives with the Caribbean islands. The settlers came mainly from the English colony of Barbados and brought African slaves with them. The cultivation of rice was introduced during the 1690s via Africans from the rice-growing regions of Africa.

James Oglethorpe established the Georgia Colony in 1733 as a common solution to two problems. At that time, tension between Spain and Great Britain was high, and the British feared that Spanish Florida was threatening the British Carolinas. Oglethorpe decided to establish a colony in the contested border region of Georgia and populate it with debtors who would otherwise have been imprisoned according to standard British practice. This plan would both rid Great Britain of its undesirable elements and provide her with a base from which to attack Florida. The first colonists arrived in 1733. -www.boundless.com

[Return to Thirteen Original Colonies Introduction](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

Connecticut



http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Connecticut_Colony

This is a map showing the Connecticut, New Haven, and Saybrook colonies from 1636-1776. It includes the territorial disputes between Connecticut and its neighbors during that time period. It does not show Connecticut's western land claims and dispute with Pennsylvania.
-www.boundless.com

[Click on Specific Ancestor for Biography](#)

JOHN BROCKETT Ancestor of Barbara Doren

GERSHOM BULKELEY Ancestor of Carolyn Cornforth

JOHN BURR III Ancestor of Candace Gietzen
• **NSCDA Register of Ancestors (ROA)**

GEORGE DENISON Ancestor of Perrin Coman
• **Captain George Denison**

SAMUEL HALE Ancestor of Caryl Ann Frost Chabot and Dorothy Frost

EDWARD HOWELL Ancestor of Julia Howell Sarno
• **Gravestone of Edward Howell**

- **Gravestone of grandson John Howell**

SAMUEL MARSHALL Ancestor of Lynda Jeffries

- **Smith's Castle Plantation - Mass Grave-site, Rhode Island**

THOMAS MINOR Ancestor of Janet Pugh, Joan K. Reynolds, Miriam W. Sellgren and Julia D. Watson

- **Lieutenant Thomas Minor Gravestone**

THOMAS MUNSON Ancestor of Joanne Bake*

- **NSCDA Register of Ancestors (ROA)**

NEHEMIAH PALMER Ancestor of Jocelyn Van Reusen and Jocelyn Vortmann

- **NSCDA Register of Ancestors (ROA)**
- **NSCDA Lineage Index (IDDL)**

STEPHEN STEELE Ancestor of Carol Steele Shively, Debbie Geier, Karen Prince

- **Founders Monument, Hartford CT**

RICHARD TREAT Ancestor of Jeanette Elizabeth Almgren

JOHN WEBSTER Ancestor of Lisa Gordon and Ann Williams*

- **Monument to Memory of John Webster**

THOMAS WELLES Ancestor of Mathilda Hammer, Ruth Lewis, A. Sandy Parsons, Leslie Rose, Donna Stoner and Jerry Williamson*

SAMUEL WOLCOTT Ancestor of Betty Hage*, Marilen Sedlock, and Elizabeth Thiele Barkett

- **Joseph Webb House**
- **Headquarters for NSCDA in State of Connecticut**

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

JOHN BROCKETT
CT
Ancestor of Barbara Doren

John Brockett (May 20, 1611 – March 12, 1690) born in [Brocket Hall](#), Hertfordshire, England. John Brockett was almost certainly the disinherited first son of Sir [John Brocket](#) of [Brocket Hall](#) in Hertfordshire, England. John fell in love with a maiden, Mary Blackwell (1609–1662), who was also a [Puritan](#). He was Gen Assembly Representative, Indian and government dispute settler.

History

1630s

He came to America in 1637 and when he was well established there, returned to England to marry her and bring her back with him. Because of this choice, however, his father not only denied him his entire inheritance, but also had his name removed from all family records. The evidence connecting father and son is not concrete, but, according to genealogist Edward Brockett, "there can be little doubt that he was the son of Sir John Brockett." He emigrated on 26 Jun 1637 to Boston, [Massachusetts Bay Colony](#). John Brockett was the first Brockett in America when he arrived at Boston, [Massachusetts Bay Colony](#). He came on the ship "Hector" with Reverend [John Davenport \(Puritan\)](#). The passengers on board that ship were "gentlemen in wealth and character, with their servants and household effects." Most were from London and engaged as merchants and commercial businesses. Their arrival was joyously hailed at Boston for they were the wealthiest of immigrants to New England at that time. Shortly arriving, however, a small group led by [Theophilus Eaton](#) decided not to join [Massachusetts Bay Colony](#), but to form a new colony. They explored the coast along Long Island Sound and chose a site that became New Haven Colony. Seven individuals wintered there to hold the site. Others arrived on 13 April 1638, including Davenport and John Brockett. They purchased land from the Quinipiac Indians and formed a government based upon strict religious principles. He moved on 13 Apr 1638 to New Haven Colony. Brockett was a signer of the first covenant of New Haven and became a leader among the founders of New Haven. His name appears more often on early town records than anyone but Eaton. In 1639, Brockett surveyed an area that is now the center of New Haven and laid out the borders with such accuracy that the same borders are used to this day.

coming late to military training.

1650s

In 1654, John Brockett was appointed surgeon among a group of soldiers who had aligned themselves against the Dutch who settled along the Hudson River.

1660s

In 1660, he led an effort to resolve a border dispute between Connecticut Colony (in Hartford) and New Haven Colony. He moved in 1667 to Elizabethtown, Union, NJ.^[3] He moved in 1669 to Wallingford, New Haven Colony.

In 1667, 28 years later, Brockett was commissioned by the Governor of New Jersey to survey the bounds of Elizabethtown, which has since become the City of Elizabeth, NJ. This effort required him to temporarily reside in that city. Brockett received an allotment of land for his efforts that he sold when he left Elizabethtown in 1670. While living in Elizabethtown, the townspeople chose him and John Ogden were chosen to represent Elizabethtown in its House of Burgess.

In 1669, the Colony of New Haven began planning Wallingford village. The area was infested with thousands of wolves that killed cattle and sheep. John Brockett and his son Samuel were among the first 100 persons to settle there. Each of the 38 settlers were allotted land. Brockett received lot #1 of 12 acres (49,000 m²) and his son John received 8 acres (32,000 m²). John was elected to public offices and became one of the leading men of the town. He eventually represented Wallingford in the General Assembly.

1670s

He was Deputy to the General Court between 1671 and 1685 in Wallingford, New Haven Colony.^[6] He served several nonconsecutive terms during this period. He served as a surgeon between 1675 and 1676 in [King Philip's War](#) (1675–1676). In Jun 1675 and 1676, Brockett was again surgeon during the King Philip's War in which 600 colonialists were killed at a cost of over \$1,000,000.

1690s

He signed a will on 3 Mar 1690 in Wallingford, New Haven, CT. He died on 12 Mar 1690 in Windsor, Hartford, CT. and is buried in the [Center Street Cemetery, Wallingford](#).

He was a surveyor, civil engineer, surgeon.

Parents: Father, Sir John Brockett, Knight (1581–1649); Mother, Mary BANNISTER.

- [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Brockett_\(American_colonist\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Brockett_(American_colonist))

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

GERSHOM BULKELEY
CT
Ancestor of Carolyn Cornforth

Rev. Gershom Bulkeley was born 6 December 1636 in Concord, Massachusetts and died 2 December 1713 at Glastonbury, Connecticut. He married Sarah Chaucey who was born on 13 June 1631 in Ware, England, and died 3 June 1699 in Wethersfield, Connecticut. She was the daughter of Rev. Charles Chauncey, second president of Harvard College and his wife Catherine Eyre.

Born shortly after his parents arrived in Massachusetts from England, the name Gershom was bestowed upon him. This was not a family name on either side, but was chosen from the Bible to commemorate the fact that the child was born far from home, for quite naturally England was still looked upon as home. Gershom means "an exile"; 'I have been a stranger in a strange land'. (Exodus II.22)

The inscription upon his tombstone in Wethersfield reads: "He was honorable in his descent; of rare abilities, extraordinary industry, excellent learning, master of many languages, exquisite in his skill in divinity, physic and law and of a most exemplary and christian life. In certam beatae resurrectionis repositus." His impressive table stone is carved with the Bulkeley Coat of Arms, featuring three horned cattle surrounding a chevron.

Gershom was one of many children from Peter Bulkeley and Grace Chetwood. His father, Peter, left his rectorship of twenty-one years at the Parish in Odell, Bedfordshire, England with his family and a large contingent of followers to America in 1635, after years of persecution for nonconformity. They landed in Massachusetts Bay Colony and a year later founded the town of Concord. During this time he wrote the Gospel Covenant.

Gershom graduated from Harvard in 1659 with one other, where he studied both divinity and

medicine. He settled in New London, Connecticut in 1661. He served as minister there until 1666 when he moved to Wethersfield and was installed as minister there until 1677.

In 1675 he was appointed surgeon by the General Court to the army that had been raised against the Indians. Gershom's medical manuscripts are currently in the Menczer Museum of Medicine and Dentistry, Hartford, Connecticut. During the King Philips War, he served as a surgeon to Connecticut soldiers. After that and upon his return to Wethersfield, he asked for a dismissal from the church of Wethersfield which he was granted in 1677. He commenced practice as a physician, which he continued for over thirty years in Glastonbury. In 1687 he was a Justice of the Peace for Hartford County under Governor Andros.

(Gershom Bulkeley, continued),

As a magistrate and statesman, he was opposed to the assumption of the government by the colonial authorities in 1689. At that time in Philadelphia he published a pamphlet on the affairs of Connecticut. The same year, he wrote a work titled, 'Will and Doom, or the miseries of Connecticut by and under usurped and arbitrary power, being a narrative of the first erection and exercise, but especially of the late changes and administration of government in their majesties colony of New England in America'. Though never printed for wide distribution, it was sent to England by the governor of New York some dozen years later as the most reliable account of New England to be found.

The first English reference to the saying "actions speak louder than words", can be found in Gershom's book, who speaks of actions as 'more significant than words'. The basic idea of Bulkeley's, which was not new in expression, is that action speak louder than words as a great determinant of behavior and character. People can say anything, but when what they say and do are contrary, it's easier to judge by what is done instead of by what is said.

Rev. Bulkeley is featured as a character in Elizabeth Geroage Speare's novel of 17th century Wethersfield, the witch of Blackbird Pond. There are also several interesting articles about Gershom Bulkeley: "The reverend Gersom Bulkeley of CT, an eminent Clerical Physicain", by Walter R. Steiner, (1904), and "The 1699 Diary of Gershom Bulkeley of Wethersfield, CT" (1987) and " A Stranger in the Land: Gershom Bulekeley of Connecticut"(1988), both by Thomas W. Jodziewicz.

The Rev. Bulkeley's children were; Caherine Bulkeley, Charles Bulkeley, John Bulkeley, Peter Bulkeley (1664) and Dorthoy who was born in 1662 in Wethersfield, Connecticut and who died in 1757. She married Thomas Treat, born in 1688 in Wethersfield, and died 1712. The other child was Edward, born in 1677.

Among other things in his will, dated 26 May 1712, in his own handwriting, he writes to his children " his best bequest I have for them is Luther's short, but significant prayer, 'Tu Domine, (...) serva, Doce'. To him therefore I commend and give them all, humbly beseeching him, that he will graciously accept them and theirs & make them all his own, & faithful to him to y death, & be their Portion, a God & Father to them in Christ his son, from generation to generation, Amen."

From Jacobus' Bulkeley Genealogy

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

CAPT JOHN BURR III
CT
Ancestor of Candace Gietzen

Capt John Burr (1698-1732)

John Burr was the son of Colonel John Burr and the grandson of Jehu Burr, who arrived in Roxbury, Massachusetts with the Winthrop fleet in 1630. He was a Lt in the Stratfield, Connecticut Company in Oct 1731 and Captain in May 1734. He was a Deputy for Fairfield in the Connecticut General Assembly in Oct 1737 and in May 1748. He married Katherine Wakeman in 1722 and had 11 children.

Burr, John III 1698-1752 Fairfield & Stratfield, CT
1. Katharine (Wakeman)
Captain, Stratfield, Trainband, 1734
Public Records of CT, [1726-1735], 488.

Register of Ancestors (ROA)

Not in Lineage Index (IDDL)

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

GEORGE DENISON
CT
Ancestor of Perrin Coman

Captain George Denison – Tells his story. 1690 (written by past curator Helen Keith)

My name is George Denison and this land was granted to me by John Winthrop, Jr. in 1654. First, let us begin with my birth in 1620 in Bishop's Statford, England where my father, William Denison, was a well-to-do merchant. In 1631 my family sailed to the colonies aboard the *Lion* and settled in Roxbury, part of the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

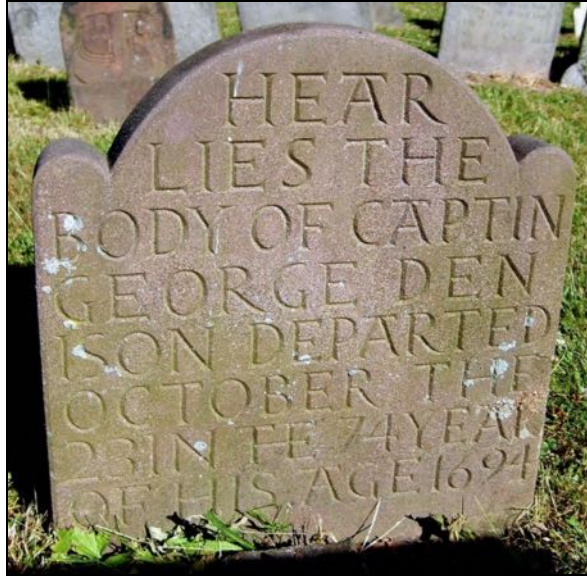
At 19 I fell in love with Bridget Thompson. I married her and we had two daughters, Sarah and Hannah. When Bridget died giving birth to Hannah I was devastated and left at once for England. There I joined Cromwell's army and soon became a Captain in his cavalry. I was wounded and taken prisoner at the battle of Marston Moor, but I escaped. I was more severely wounded at the battle of Naseby and was sent to Cork, Ireland to recuperate at the home of John Borodell, a wealthy English leather merchant. My nurse was his lovely daughter, Ann, whom I married and with whom I returned to Roxbury the year before my dear mother, Margaret Chandler, died in 1645.

I expected to be elected as the head of the militia, but was not so honored. Immediately thereafter I joined John Winthrop, Jr. at Pequot Plantation, later known as New London. There, in 1651, I was named Captain of the train band and was given a house and six acres. I established the defenses for the town. In return for my services I was granted 200 acres east of the Mystic River in the town of Stonington. I have served as Deputy to the Connecticut General Court from New London and from Stonington many times. I served on the War Commission for New London in 1653; as Captain during King Philip's War 1676 and second in command of the Connecticut Army under Maj. Robert Treat. I was rewarded with large land grants by both The Colony of Connecticut and the town of Stonington. The Mohegan chief, Oneco, gave me a great feast and 2,000 acres of tribal lands. My sons will inherit many thousands of acres in Connecticut and Rhode Island.

In 1654 I removed my family to my land in Stonington and built a rough lean-to surrounded by a stout stockade for my protection and that of my neighbors. As an excellent surveyor I fixed the boundaries of the town of Stonington and laid out a road from the ford at the Pawcatuck to the ferry at the Thames. Thomas Stanton and I set aside 8,000 acres for the scattered Pequot tribe as the first Indian reservation. After the threat of attacks by the Indians ended I took down the palisade and built my "grate hous" where Lady Ann, as my good wife was called by our neighbors and friends, held famous dinner parties and "grate feasts" for friends and family, including our three sons and six daughters (all married now) and our 58 grandchildren.

- <http://denisonhomestead.org/denison-society/captain-george-denison/>

George Denison died in Hartford, Oct. 23, 1694, while there on some special business, being 76 years old.



Captian George Denison

Ancient Burying Ground, Hartford, Hartford County CT

- <http://www.findagrave.com/cgi-bin/fg.cgi?page=gr&GRid=11435695>

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

SAMUEL HALE

CT

Ancestor of Caryl Ann Frost Chabot and Dorothy Frost

Lieutenant Samuel Hale was born in 1644/5 in Wethersfield, Connecticut. He married Ruth Edwards on 20 June 1670. She died on 26 December 1682. In 1695, he married Mary Wells.

In 1669, his father gave him several pieces of land including 30 acres in the West Field. In 1670, his father-in-law, Thomas Edwards of Hockanum gave him 58 acres of land at "Nabocke, by the Beaver Holes, near Salmon Brook." In 1672, the Town of Wethersfield gave him 80 acres at Nayaug and in the same year his father gave him 96 acres at Naubuc, being land that formerly belonged to Reverend Henry Smith. He was fence viewer for Naubuc and Nayaug in 1678. Hence it may be presumed that he was a resident on the East side of the River; for which district he was surveyor of highways in 1686, when he signed an agreement for a church there in February of 1691.

He, with his brother John, were petitioners to General Court in 1690, for a town incorporation. He resided in Glastonbury, Connecticut, where he served as Justice of the Peace. He died in Glastonbury on 18 November 1711.

His tombstone is inscribed: "Here lieth inhumed the body of Mr. Samuel Hale, Esq., of late one of Her Majestie's Justices of the Peace, who d. on the 18th day of Nov. Anno Dom., 1711, and in the 67th year of his age."

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

EDWARD HOWELL
CT
Ancestor of Julia Howell Sarno

Edward Howell was an early settler and leader of men. He chose to come to the New World when in his late 40's, considered an advanced age at the time, much more so than today.

While there is no record of Edward Howell arriving in Lynn, Massachusetts, he is described as a farmer residing in Lynn in 1636 on the bound of the Saugus and Reading (History of Lynn, by Lewis, Page 59).^{*} There is a record of Howell operating a mill in Lynn which he bought from Mr. Edward Tomlins (page 82).^{*} Land in Lynn was swampy and rocky and not appealing to those engaged in agriculture.

In 1640, seeking a better life, Edward led a group of men and their families, known as "the Undertakers" to eastern Long Island, where they named their new settlement Southampton. This was the first English settlement in what is now the state of New York. As Edward was the leader of the group, the Howell Coat of Arms is displayed on the West Staircase of the capital building in Albany.

Then in his mid 50's, Edward led the group of nine families. They were soon joined by 11 more families. To sustain the settlement, he built a mill in a nearby area now called Water Mill in 1644. There is an old English proverb that say "a millwright is a man who can do anything." Edward had to know about hydraulics, building and repairing machinery, grinding of corn and much more.

Edward served as magistrate for Southampton, representing them at meetings in Hartford, sometimes traveling there twice per year. (In that era, Manhattan belonged to the Dutch, so Long Island communities settled by the English reported to New Haven and Hartford.) Edward continued as magistrate until 1653 and served as Assistant of the Connecticut Colony from 1647-53. He died in October, 1655.

Edward Howell was born a gentleman in Marsh Gibbon in Buckinghamshire, England, and was baptized on July 26, 1584. He was the eldest son of Henry and Margaret (Hawten) Howell. At the age of 32, Edward married Frances Paxton on April 7, 1616, at Odell in Bedfordshire. The service was performed by the Reverend Peter Bulkeley, an influential Puritan preacher who departed for New England in 1635. Upon his father's death in 1625, Edward then 41, had inherited Westbury Manor. His mother, Margaret had the privilege of a life estate, living at Westbury until her death in 1638 when Edward (then in Lynn) sold it.

While Edward's children (Dorothy, Margaret, John—the eldest surviving son, Edward, Margery and Richard were baptized at his parish church in Marsh Gibbon, it is likely that the years between 1616 and 1635 were ones of growing adherence to Puritanism. Edward's son Richard (the one from whom I am descended) was born in 1629. His mother, Frances, died in 1630. Edward then married Eleanor Maier now known Major (Just as "f's" in early writing became "s's", "i's" became "j's", I was informed by the historian at Aylesbury, the county seat for Buckinghamshire in a research trip there in June, 2013). Edward's and Eleanor's sons were, Henry, buried in 1632, followed by Arthur, baptized in September 1632, and Edmund, baptized in 1633-34.

Edward was buried at the Old Southend Burying Ground in Southampton at the eastern end of Long Island in New York State. When his original headstone suffered the consequences of time and the elements, members of the steering committee of the Edward Howell Family Association, put a new stone in place during summer of 1977. My father, Gelston Howell, a member of the steering committee, supervised the project and the design of the pink granite headstone and I was there for the dedication.

- the History of Lynn, by Alonzo Lewis, published 1844 in Boston by Samuel N. Dickinson



Edward Howell



grandson John Howell

John was the grandson of Edward and it is just so unusual to have a stone that old and still readable. It is the oldest surviving headstone in the cemetery. Edward's stone is the one my father (Gelston Howell) commissioned and had put in place of the old destroyed one in 1977. Father had studied art and was particular so it is likely that the old stone resembled the original but is of pink granite, a more durable material than stones used for this purpose in the 1650's. Both headstones are located in the Old South Burying Ground in Southampton (Long Island) New York. - Julia Howell Sarno.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

SAMUEL MARSHALL

CT

Ancestor of Lynda Jeffries

Samuel was brought to New England [in 1634] as a child of four years. He learned the shoemaker trade of his father Thomas Marshall] and probably assisted his father as Ferry Keeper in Boston. He was literate, probably educated at the school to which his father gave money. It has yet to be determined what his relationship with the Allyn family of Windsor was. It appears that he spent his entire adult life in Windsor Connecticut.

Shortly after his marriage, records show that he served as an attorney in civil actions brought by English plaintiffs against local defendants. In January 1652 he brought Thomas Marshfield's house on broad street and sold it the next year. He dealt extensively in the purchase and resale of property. Later records

show that he was licensed to sell cider as an alcoholic beverage and also planted apple orchards. On a couple occasions he sued and was counter-sued for slander, etc. In addition to following his father's profession as a shoemaker, he was an active citizen. He was active in the local militia but did not seem to be active in church affairs. In 1673 "Quartermaster" Samuel Marshall received a grant of 150 acres. He became a Captain, in the Windsor Horse Troop.

Samuel Marshall was one of the "five brave Captains killed at the head of their companies in the attack on the Narragansett Fort, in the Great Swamp Fight" of the King Philip's War on Dec. 19, 1675. Before this fight he made his will on Sept. 4, 1675. His body was taken along with many others to Smith's Castle in Wickford, Rhode Island and buried in a mass grave. This is now called Smiths Castle Mass Gracesite, Wickford, Washington County, Rhode Island.

Capt. Samuel Marshall - "King Phillips War"



Smith's Castle Plantation - Mass Grave-site, Rhode Island

Capt. Samuel Marshall was killed at the head of his troops Dec. 19, 1675, at Fort Narragansett, Connecticut, in "King Phillips War". A war between New England colonists and Metacomet or King Phillip, as the English called him. Metacomet was a son of Massasoit, who welcomed the Pilgrims to Plymouth. He became chief of the Wampanoag tribe of Indians after the death of his father in 1661, and the death of his older brother, Wamsutta, or Alexander, soon after.

Metacomet opposed the giving up of land continuously demanded by the colonists, and in 1675 started a war in alliance with the Nipmuc and Narragansett tribes. The Indians attacked 52 of the 90 towns then settled in New England, destroying 12 of them. They killed some 600 hundred persons, including the members of two ambushed colonial forces.

Early in 1676 the Narragansetts were defeated and slaughtered. In August, Captain Benjamin Church defeated the Wampanoags, and Metacomet was tracked down and killed at Mount Hope, near Bristol, RI. He was beheaded and quartered, his head being carried to Plymouth and displayed on a pole, his hands were taken to Boston. His wife and son were captured and sold into slavery.

- <http://larkturnthehearts.blogspot.com/2011/01/capt-samuel-marshall-king-phillips->

war.html

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

THOMAS MINOR

CT

Ancestor of Janet Pugh, Joan K. Reynolds, Miriam W. Sellgren and Julia D. Watson

Thomas Minor was born in Chew Magma, Somerset, England in 1608, the youngest of nine children. He sailed to America in 1629 and came to Salem, Massachusetts. He moved several times before settling in Charlestown, where he became a founder of the First Congregational Church. In 1634, he married Grace Palmer of Charlestown. He and Grace eventually had ten children. Also in 1634, he was granted four acres, which he increased to 10 acres by 1637. In 1636 they moved to Hingham, Massachusetts where they stayed until 1645 when they joined John Winthrop Jr.'s company in New London. They moved again in 1652 to Pawcatuck, now Stonington, Connecticut, a town that he and three associates, one of them Walter Palmer, his father-in-law, founded. As he reported in his diary, he built the family frame house with the help of his sons. In Stonington, too, he was the founder of another "first church."

In his own words he says: "The 24th of Aprill, 1669, I Thomas Minor am by my accounts sixtie one yeares ould. I was by the towne and this yeare Chosen to be a select man the Townes Treasurer, The Townes Recorder, The brander of houses by the General Courte Recorded the head officer of the Traine band by the same Courte one of the ffoure that have the charge of the milishcia of the whole Countie and Chosen and the sworne Commissioner and one to assist in keeping the Countie Courte."

During his lifetime he often served in both military and governmental capacities. In 1649 he was appointed "Military Sergeant in the town of Pequett" and had the power to call forth and train the male inhabitants. When he was 68, he joined with other able-bodied men from Stonington and fought in the great swamp fight against the Indians at Narragansett.

In 1650 he was appointed as first deputy to the Connecticut General County, the legislature. He also served eight times as a deputy from Stonington between 1665 and 1698. By Colonial appointment in 1649, he was Magistrate, a Justice in New London, and also in Stonington for the years of 1664 and 65. Because he was such a distinguished public servant, he was given a Colonial land grant of 100 acres in 1666, and 50 more in 1667.

We can assume from his participation in the war in 1674, and his diary entries which state that he was active on the farm until he was 76, that he was a man of great strength. Providing for a family in those times was no mean feat. At one time he kept a constable from Massachusetts from entering to remove household effects to pay for taxes because Thomas thought he lived in Connecticut. Massachusetts and Connecticut each claimed that his farm was in their state. Thomas stood in the doorway and as he wrote in his diary, "he carried nothing of myne out of the house if I could help it." Thomas Minor won that confrontation. And so we have a picture of a physically strong man, committed to his church, working for his family and his fellow townspeople with complete involvement of his mind and heart. He died in Stonington in 1690. His grave is covered with a large "wolfstone," a slab from one of his fields, which is inscribed to read: "Here lyeth the body of Lieutenant Thomas Minor, aged 83 years.



Lieutenant Thomas Minor Gravestone

Stonington CT

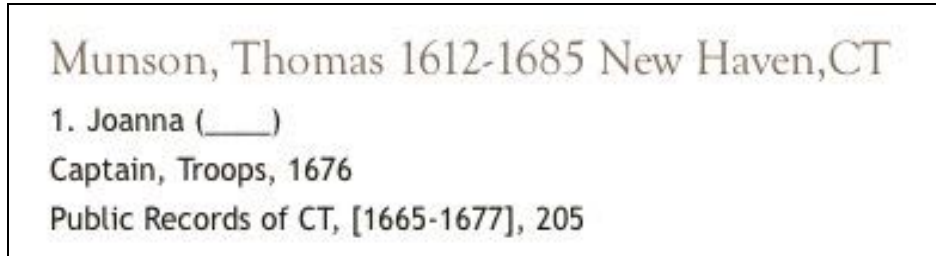
http://alum.wpi.edu/~p_miner/Miner1.htm

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

THOMAS MUNSON
CT
Ancestor of Joanne Bake*

*deceased



Ancestor Register (ROA)
NSCDA

Thomas Munson, Cpt

Also Known As: "Captain"
Birthdate: September 13, 1612
Birthplace: Rattlesden, Suffolk, England, (Present UK)
Death: Died May 7, 1685 in New Haven, New Haven County, Connecticut Colony, (Present USA)
Place of Burial: Grove Street Cemetery, New Haven, New Haven County, Connecticut, United States
Immediate Family: Son of John Munson, III and Elizabeth Munson
Husband of Joanna Munson; Susan Munson and Joanna Munson (Mew)
Father of Samuel Munson; Mary Anne Stebbins (Munson); Elizabeth Cooper (Munson); Ensign Samuel Munson and Hannah Tuttle
Brother of Elizabeth Munson; John Munson; Frances Munson; Judith Munson; Mary Munson and 1 other
Occupation: Lieutenant in Command of New Haven Troops, sent to Norwottuck, Indian Guard, Carpenter, elected official, Civic Office, Pequot Indian war, King Philip's war

- <http://www.geni.com/people/Capt-Thomas-Munson/6000000002362459065>

Munson, Myron, M.A. *The Munson Record*. New Haven: The Tuttle Morehouse and Taylor Press, 1896.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestor

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

NEHEMIAH PALMER

CT

Ancestor of Jocelyn Van Reusen and Jocelyn Vortmann

Palmer, Nehemiah 1637-1717 Stonington, CT

1. Hannah (Stanton)

Deputy, General Court

Public Records of CT, 1665-1677, 83

Register of Ancestors (ROA)

Palmer, Nehemiah

1637-1717 Stonington CT

Claimant ID # 3015C (Approved:20-Jan-87)

SPOUSE: Stanton, Hannah Lord b. 1644 in Stonington, CT d. October 17, 1727 in Stonington, C T

MARRIED: Nov. 20, 1662 in Stonington, CT

OTHER INFO:

REFERENCES:

Service: Deputy from Stonington to the Connecticut General Court in 1668, 1669, 1674, 1676, 1681, 1685, 1686, 1689, 1693-5, 1699, 1700, 1703, 1705, 1707. Member of the Governors Council, 1703-05. Proof of this service: "Index of Ancestors Colonial Wars" (1922) pp. 351-56; "Abridged Compendium, Vol. III" pp. 338, 684; Register of Ancestors, NSCDA in the State of Connecticut, 1983, page 40.

1. "Cheeseborough Family" by Anna C. Wildey (N.Y. 1903), p. 475, 526-27.
2. "Palmer Groups" Emily Wilder Leavitt (Boston, 1901-05), p. 25-27.
3. "Abridged Compendium Vol. III" pp. 338-68.
4. "Index of Ancestors Colonial Wars (1922)", p. 356.
5. "History of the Town of Stonington" Richard Anson Wheeler (Baltimore, original 1900, reprint 1977), p. 509 (MD-NP & HS)

Claimant ID # 5484C (Approved:9-Jun-89)

SPOUSE: Stanton, Hannah b. in d. 17 Oct 1727 in Stonington, CT

MARRIED: 20 Nov 1662 in

OTHER INFO:

REFERENCES:

Service: Deputy to the General Court, 1668, etc. Proof of this service: Public Records of onnecticut, 1665-1677, p. 83.

1. Weekapaug Cemetery Inscip. Stonington, Vol. 47, p. 60.
2. Hale Copy: Stonington, Ct, Vit. Rec. Vol.I, pp 91,133.
3. Hist. of Stonington, p. 509.
4. Hist. of Montville, p. 436.
5. Stanton Genealogy pp. 65, 67

(continued)

Claimant ID # 6190C (Approved:9-Jun-08)

SPOUSE: Stanton, Hannah Lord b. 1644 in Stonington, CT d.17 October 1727 in Stonington, CT

MARRIED: 19 November 662 in Stonington, CT

OTHER INFO:

REFERENCES:

Service: Office: Deputy from Stonington to the CT General Court in 668, 1669, 1674, 1676, 1681, 1685, 1689, 1693-5, 1699, 1700, 1703, 1707. Member of Governors Council, 1703-05. Proof of this service: Public Records of CT, 1665-1677, 83. "Index of Ancestors Colonial Wars" (1922), p. 351-56, "Abridged Compendium, Vol. II pp. 338, 684: Register of Ancestors, NSCDA in the State of Connecticut, 1983, page 40. (1) "Cheeseborough Family" by Anna C. Wildey (N.Y. 11903), p. 475, 526-27. (2) "Palmer Groups" Emily Wilder Leavitt (Boston, 1901-05), p. 25-27 3). "Abridged Compendium Vol. III" pp. 338-68 4), "Index of Ancestors Colonial Wars (1922)," p. 356. 5) "History of the Town of Stonington" Richard Anson Wheeler (Baltimore, original 1900, reprint 1977, p. 509 (MD, NR & HS).

1. (No. 18) NEHGS.
2. (No. 19), Ancestry.com Marriage records

Claimant ID # 7433N (Approved:17 Oct 2011)

SPOUSE: Stanton, Hannah Lord b. 1644 in d.17 October 1727 in Stonington, CT

MARRIED: 20 Nov. 1662 in Stonington, CT

OTHER INFO:

REFERENCES:

Service: Deputy, General Court. Proof of this service: Public Records of CT [1665-1677], 83.

1. Stonington/Barbour (pub) 291, 292.
2. Hist. Stonington 508-509, 578

(continued)

IDDL Common Ancestor / Descendant Report

◀ Back to Search Result

Palmer, Nehemiah

b.April 9, 1702 Stonington, CT

d.July 25, 1762 Stonington, CT

Claimant ID # 3015C (Approved:20-Jan-87)

SPOUSE: Palmer, Submit b. May 3, 1718 in Stonington, CT d.Jan. 29, 1793 in Stonington, CT

MARRIED: April 29, 1736 in Stonington, CT

OTHER INFO:

REFERENCES:

1. "Cheeseborough Family" by Anna C. Wildey (N.Y. 1903), p. 527. (BMD-NP).
2. "Palmer Groups" Emily Wilder Leavitt (Boston, 1901-05), p. 74-75.
3. "History of the Town of Stonington" Richard Anson Wheeler (Baltimore, original 1900, reprint 1977), P. 512 (BM-NP) p. 512 (BM-SP)

(continued)

Claimant ID # 6578C (Approved:12-Jan-70)

SPOUSE: Saxton, Jerusha b. Bapt. 2 December 1683 in Stonington, CT d. in

MARRIED: 17 January 1699/1700 in Stonington, CT

OTHER INFO:She m(2) James Dean, Jr., 29 December, 1735, Stonington, CT

REFERENCES:

1. Baptismal Record of Nehemiah Palmer, Stonington, CT.
2. History of Stonington, CT., R.A. Wheeler (1900), pp. 509-512.
3. Palmer Groups, L.M. Palmer (1901-05), pp. 28, 48.
4. Thomas Stanton..., W.A. Stanton (1891),p. 68.
5. Stonington, CT., Births-Marriages-Deaths, 1658-1854 (Barbour Collection, 1918), p. 193 (1:92); p. 75 (3:31).
6. Snow Estes Ancestry, N.E., Snow and M.M. Jillon (1939), pages 390, 418

Lineage Index (IDDL)

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

STEPHEN STEELE

CT

Ancestor of Carol Steele Shively, Debbie Geier, Karen Prince

The Reverend Stephen Steele was born in 1696 in Hartford, Connecticut. He was the sixth child born to Sarah Barnard and James Steele. Stephen graduated from Yale in 1718 and became the first settled minister in Tolland, Connecticut in 1720. His salary was 75 pounds a year, which represented more than ten dollars annually from each family. He also received a plot of land and other perquisites. Tolland was considered unbroken wilderness until about 1713.

Stephen's grandfather was George Steele who was born in 1585 in Fairstead, County Essex, England. George and his older brother John came to America in 1632 to Cambridge, Massachusetts. George became a freeman in 1634 and was one of the 17 pioneers who trekked overland in 1635 to settle in Hartford, Connecticut. George and John are listed as two of the founders of Hartford since they settled in Hartford before February 1640 as evidenced by the Book of Distribution of Land. Their names appear on the Founders Monument dedicated on 6 August 1986, in memory of the first settlers of Hartford. This monument stands in the churchyard of the Old South Church on Main Street in Hartford.



Founders Monument, Hartford CT

George and John Steel

<http://hartgen.renderplus.com>He married Ruth Porter on 2 May 1720 in Hadley, MA

The couple had ten children. Stephen continued in his ministry until he was stricken with consumption in 1758 and died 4 December 1759. He is buried in Tolland, Connecticut.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

**RICHARD TREAT
CT**

Ancestor of Jeanette Elizabeth Treat Almgren

Richard Treat was an early New England settler and a Patentee of the Royal Charter of Connecticut, 1662.

Richard Treat was born August 28, 1584 in Pitminster, England. He died February 14, 1669 at Wethersfield, Connecticut. He married Alice Gaylord on April 27, 1615 at Pitminster, Summerset County, England. She was the daughter of Hugh Gaylord and Joanna. Richard and Alice immigrated to the Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1637. Richard and Alice were the parents of twelve children. Their son, Robert Treat (1622-1710), served as governor of Connecticut from 1683 to 1698, and was one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence. Their daughter, Joanna, was the wife of Lieut. John Hollister. Their daughter, Susana, was the wife of Robert Webster, the son of Governor John Webster. His daughter, Honor, married John Deming, an early Puritan settler and original Patentee of the Royal Charter of Connecticut.

Richard Treat was one of the first settlers of Wethersfield and was an extensive landowner in the town. He had over nine hundred acres and represented Wethersfield in the first general court in 1637. He was appointed in 1642 to the general court. He, along with others, superintended building a ship, to collect revenue. Mr. Treat bore the title of 'Sir' as early as 1642. He was a man of high social standing and of much influence in the town of Wethersfield as evident from the positions of trust occupied by him.

Richard Treat was chosen as a juror June 15 1643. It was considered a high position that only prominent persons, and grand jurors held.

In April 1644, Richard Treat was chosen deputy, and was annually elected for fourteen years, up to 1657-8. He was elected assistant magistrate of the colony eight times from 1658 to 1665 and was named in the royal charter of Charles II as one of the original patentees of the Charter of the Colony of Connecticut from 1658 to 1665. On October 25, 1644 Mr. Treat and Mr. Wells were on the committee and collected revenues from the Fenwick tax, a fund that supported the students in the college at Cambridge. In 1654 Richard Treat was chosen on a committee to lay out land grants by the town in 1660, he was elected a townsman, an office answering to the present selectmen.

Richards Treat's descendents number in the thousands today including; George Herbert, Walker Bush, George Walker Bush, Robert Treat Paine, Treat Williams, Thomas Edison, John Pierpont Morgan, Charles H. Treat, Samuel Treat Jr, Tennessee Williams, John Hay Whitney, and Cornelius Vanderbilt Whitney.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

JOHN WEBSTER

CT

Ancestor of Lisa Gordon and Ann Williams*

** deceased*

John Webster was born in England in 1590 and died in Hadley, Massachusetts on 5 April 1661 at the ripe old age of 71. He was a very active person all of his life. It is said that he was the progenitor of the oldest, and probably the most numerous family in America bearing the name Webster. No doubt his most eminent descendant was Noah Webster, the chief lexicographer of the English language.

In 1630, at age 40, John and his wife Agnes (Smith) and their family of five children, Matthew, Robert, Ann, Elizabeth and Mary, moved from England to Newtowne (now Cambridge), Massachusetts. Two other children were born in Massachusetts, Thomas and William.

Six years later, in 1636, he moved again, this time to Hartford, Connecticut and was one of the original proprietors/founders of the Colony of Connecticut. Presumably he was with the Reverend Thomas Hooker and his historic party. Hartford was then known by its Indian name, Suckiaug, meaning "black earth," possibly coming from the rich soil of its fertile meadows and cultivated fields. Portions of the country were even then under rough tillage by the Indians. Out of the 153 original settlers of Hartford, only 10 gentlemen beside John Webster were honored with the imposing prefix "Mr." The ordinary title was "Goodman," often "Goody" or "Neighbor."

His plantation home was located on the south side of the Little River on what afterward, was and still is, known as Governor Street on the east side, half way between Charter Oak Avenue and Wyllys Street. Governor Street was so named because of the number of men living in that vicinity who became governors. The famous Charter Oak tree stood on this street. A monument has been erected to mark the location of the fallen Oak, upon which is the inscription: "near this spot stood the Charter Oak, memorable in the History of the Colony Connecticut as the hiding place of the Charter, 31 October 1687. The tree fell in August 1856."

A year later in 1637, Webster became a member of the Hartford, Connecticut General Court. During 1637-38 he was on one of the committees and for the first time, he as a committee member, sat with the Court of Magistrates, Hartford. Also, in 1638, he was chosen as a member of the committee that declared war against the Pequot Indians and was elected to the government court and chosen as a deputy Commissioner for Hartford.

In 1639 he was elected as a magistrate, serving until 1665. Also, in 1639, he was on the committee to confer with the New Haven Colony about Indian uprisings.

By 1642, he was one of a committee which formed the code of criminal laws for the Colony. In 1654 he was a commissioner for the United Colonies. In 1655 he was made Deputy Governor of the Connecticut Colony. In 1656 he was elected as the 5th Governor of the Connecticut Colony. To be elected to this position he not only had to be a freeman, but must have previously been a magistrate and always a member of some "appointed congregation." Also, at this time a Governor was permitted to hold this office for only one out of two years. As Governor, Webster received the munificent sum of 30 pounds a year, this salary having been established in 1647, prior to which time there was no pecuniary compensation. This was the first office to receive compensation in the Colony.

In 1657 he was made Connecticut's First Assistant. By 1659 he was an influential member of the Church of Hartford and was one of the leaders of the Hadley Company. Hence, he moved his residence to Hadley, Massachusetts. The next year, 1660, he was made a magistrate of Hadley, Massachusetts.

His outstanding career came to an end with his death on 6 April 1661. He was buried in Old Hadley Cemetery. In 1818, at this burial site, Noah Webster erected a monument in his memory. In 1836, on the 200th Anniversary of the settlement of Hartford, the citizens erected a monument in memory and honor of its founders. This monument stands in the cemetery behind the church, fifth from the top, to correspond with the number of his term, is the name of John Webster, the Colonial Governor.

Note: See Founders Monument, Stephen Steele Biography

John Webster now sleeps with the pioneers who willingly blazed the path of empire in the New World. Thank you, John Webster, my great-great-great-great-great-great-great grandfather.



Monument to Memory of John Webster
Old Hadley Cemetery, Hartford CT
www.findagrave.com, Added by: [James Bianco](#)

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

THOMAS WELLES

CT

Ancestor of Mathilda Hammer, Ruth Lewis, A. Sandy Parsons, Leslie Rose, Donna Stoner and Jerry Williamson*

* *deceased*

Our ancestor Thomas Welles was born around 1590 in Stourton, Whichford, Warwickshire, England (not in 1598 in Essex, as previously thought). To put his new birth date into historical perspective, in 1590 Queen Elizabeth was on the throne, Shakespeare was alive, and just two years earlier the English had defeated the Spanish Armada.

In 1615 Thomas Welles received some Warwickshire property in Burmington from his father and brother. Soon after July 5, that same year, he married a young woman named Alice Tomes. The married couple lived for the next twenty years in England. During that time they became involved in the Puritan movement. In 1635, for religious reasons, they immigrated to Massachusetts with their six children. Thomas Welles and his family followed the Reverend Thomas Hooker to Connecticut in June of 1636.

This ancestor of ours was a real achiever. What a resume he could have compiled! He helped to establish the settlement of Stratford, Connecticut; he was one of the founders of Hartford; he served for a number of years on the General Court, which was the law-making body of the Connecticut Colony; he was elected Treasurer of the Colony in 1639, Secretary in 1641, Deputy Governor several times during the 1650s, and Governor in both 1655 and 1658. He was serving as a magistrate on the General Court when, in 1639, it adopted the Fundamental Orders of Connecticut, a document famous for being the world's first written constitution. Two years later, in his capacity as Secretary, he transcribed the Fundamental Orders into the official record book.

Note: See Founders Monument, Stephen Steele Biography

Governor Haynes died in office about 1653/4, and as the Deputy Governor, Edward Hopkins, was abroad in England, Thomas Welles was chosen Moderator of the General Court, or, in effect, acting Governor. Edward Hopkins was appointed Governor in 1654 by the Protector, as well as Member of Parliament, and Thomas Welles was Deputy Governor. This meant that Thomas was Acting Governor once more, as Hopkins remained in England for a time. Then in 1655, Thomas Welles was chosen Governor of Connecticut. Since the Connecticut Constitution forbade a governor to succeed himself, he became Deputy Governor in 1656 and 1657, but again was elected Governor in 1658, while, in 1659, he was again Deputy Governor. While he was Governor in 1658, Thomas Welles' sons, John and Samuel, were a Magistrate and a Deputy, respectively, so Thomas presided over a Court of which two of his sons were members. In 1659, Thomas held two offices; that of Deputy Governor to Governor John Winthrop, and that of Commissioner from Connecticut for the United Colonies.

Alas, Thomas' first wife, our ancestor Alice, did not live long enough to become First Lady of Connecticut Colony – if there was such a title back then. Five years after she had bravely set off for New England with her family, she died. In 1646 Thomas married a widow named Elizabeth Deming Foote, who was managing a large homestead in Wethersfield, Connecticut. Elizabeth preferred not to leave that area after her marriage, so Thomas moved to Wethersfield from Hartford. Even though he was busy with the affairs of government, Thomas still served on a committee in Wethersfield to obtain a new minister for the First Church there. On "Noueber the 7th 1659" he began to write his will in his own hand. Thomas Welles died 14 January 1660, "very suddenly, being well at supper and dead before midnight." The inventory of his estate was taken by John Cotton and John Deming and totaled

1069 pounds, 8 shillings, 2 pence, a large sum for that time. He must have been well educated as an item listed was, "Books English & Latine."

After reading about Thomas Welles, we have concluded that he was not only a dedicated Puritan, but also a born leader. He was intelligent, energetic, civic-minded, and venturesome. We are happy to be descended from him, and from his courageous wife Alice as well.

Reference:

Siemiakoski, Donna Holt. The Descendants of Governor Thomas Welles and His Wife Alice Tomes.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

SAMUEL WOLCOTT

CT

Ancestor of Betty Hage* and Marilen Sedlock

**deceased*

It was Samuel's great-grandfather, Henry Wolcott, born in 1578, who first brought his family to America from Somersetshire, England in 1630 to avoid persecution. He first settled in Dorchester where he resided for six years. Then he and five other families moved to a new area to found the present town of Windsor in 1636. There, he was one of the first magistrates in the Connecticut Colony.

Henry named his son, born in 1610, Henry, as well. This Henry married Sarah Newberry, and had seven children, including another Henry, John, Samuel, and Josiah.

The above Samuel Wolcott was born in 1647. He married Judith Appleton. He and his brother, Josiah, received property in Wethersfield, when their father died.

My ancestor, Samuel Wolcott, was the first-born son of Samuel and Judith. He married Abigail Collins, the daughter of Nathaniel Collins and Mary Whiting, in December of 1705 when he was twenty six. She was the granddaughter of the Reverend William Whiting who first settled Hartford.

As a youth, Samuel spent much of his childhood with his uncle, Josiah, of Salem, Massachusetts. However, when Samuel's own father died in 1695, family responsibilities forced him to return home to Wethersfield, interrupting his plans for his own education. He became an importing merchant; was prominent in military affairs and considered "a rich man for his day."

In October 1705 he was made Captain of the Hartford County troop of dragoons, the most active Connecticut company in the service.

Samuel Wolcott enjoyed a good life, and died in 1734 at age 55. Much of his property passed to his own son, Samuel (sometimes called the Major), who sold one particular parcel to a gentleman named Joseph Webb.



Joseph Webb House

en.wikipedia.org

Mr. Webb later demolished the buildings and erected a complex famous in American history, which includes "Hospitality Hall" of Wethersfield. For it is here that General George Washington stayed for about a week as he and French Admiral Rochambeau planned the campaign that resulted in the surrender of

Cornwallis at Yorktown, Virginia. This building is now the headquarters for the National Society of the Colonial Dames of America in the State of Connecticut.



Headquarters for NSCDA in State of Connecticut

References:

Genealogy of Connecticut Families. Vol. 8. New England Historic and Genealogical Register. Stiles, A.M. The History of Ancient Wethersfield.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

Delaware



http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Province_of_Pennsylvania

Delaware Colony in the North American **Middle Colonies** was a region of the **Province of Pennsylvania** although never legally a separate **colony**. From 1682 to 1776 it was part of the Penn proprietorship and was known as the lower counties. In 1701 it gained a separate Assembly from the upper counties but had the same Governor as the rest of Pennsylvania.

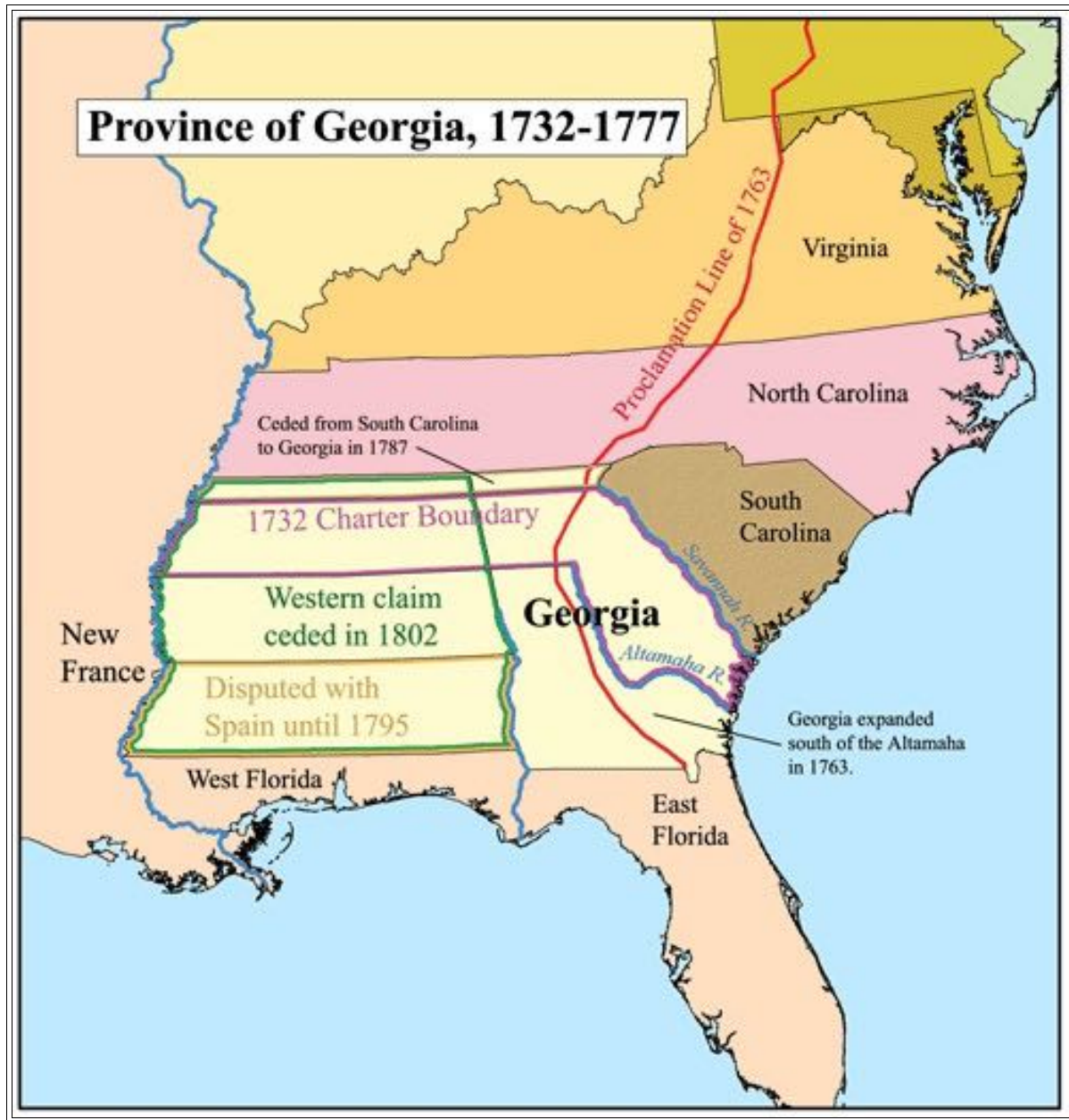
[Click on Specific Ancestor for Biography](#)

(None at this time)

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

Georgia



http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Province_of_Georgia

James Oglethorpe established the Georgia Colony in 1733 as a common solution to two problems. At that time, tension between Spain and Great Britain was high, and the British feared that Spanish Florida was threatening the British Carolinas. Oglethorpe decided to establish a colony in the contested border region of Georgia and populate it with debtors who would otherwise have been imprisoned according to standard British

practice. This plan would both rid Great Britain of its undesirable elements and provide her with a base from which to attack Florida. The first colonists arrived in 1733.

[Click on Specific Ancestor for Biography](#)

(None at this time)

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

Maryland



http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Province_of_Maryland

The Province of Maryland was a British colony in North America that existed from 1632 until 1776, when it joined the other twelve of the North American colonies in rebellion against Great Britain and became the US state of Maryland. The province began as a proprietary colony of the English Lord Baltimore, as a haven for English Catholics in the new world. Charles I of England granted the charter for Maryland to create a colony north of the Potomac to rival New Netherland's claims to the Delaware River valley.

[Click on Specific Ancestor for Biography](#)

HEZEKIAH ALEXANDER Ancestor of Sally McMurray
• Rockhouse

THADDEUS BEALL Ancestor of Virginia Alworth Stearns

ROBERT BROOKE Ancestor of Mary Lee Brooke Scheid

FRANCIS POSEY Ancestor of Klonie Kunzel

JOHN WORTHINGTON Ancestor of Betsy M. Flynn and Barbara Torrey Smith
• **John Worthington Gravestone**

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

HEZEKIAH ALEXANDER
MD
Ancestor of Sally McMurray

Hezekiah Alexander was born 13 January 1727 in Cecil County, Maryland to Joseph Alexander and his second wife Margaret McKnitt. His father was prosperous but Hezekiah and six other of his father's fifteen children moved to Mecklenburg County North Carolina in the 1760's when the area was known as the Piedmont.

Alexander married Mary Sample in Pennsylvania 12 June 1752. They had eleven children. At one time they owned fifteen slaves. He was a blacksmith by trade and farmed and raised cattle. He built a fine fieldstone house in 1774 with two stories and a cellar. It was here that redcoats under the command of Lord Cornwallis visited the farmhouse and destroyed much of its contents. Alexander signed the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence 20 May 1775 and the Mecklenburg Convention eleven days later with four other Cecil County Maryland natives.

During the Revolutionary War Alexander was in charge of procuring supplies for American forces and came into contact with General Greene and General George Washington.

Rockhouse, the Alexander ancestral home, has been preserved and restored and is listed on the National Register of Historic Places. Originally far from Charlotte, it is now well within the city limits and sits on the grounds of the Charlotte Museum of History.



Rockhouse
The Charlotte Museum of History

Sources:

Alexander, Dr. John Brevard Men of Mark in Mecklenburg: from Reminiscences of the Past Sixty Years.
Pgs. 280-282

Saunders, William L. Colonial Records of North Carolina. Volume 22 pg. 396.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

THADDEUS BEALL
MD
Ancestor of Virginia Alworth Stearns

Thaddeus Beall (1747-1815) was among a group of Scots organizing a militia rebelling against Oliver Cromwell. He was sent as a political prisoner to the Colonies. He fought valiantly as a member of the Revolutionary Army.

Source:

MD Arch. Vol. XI, folio 544 reports Thaddeus Beall 2nd Lieutenant, Frederick Co. Militia, July 3, 1776.

Birthdate:	1747
Birthplace:	PRINCE GEORGES, MD, USA
Death:	Died July 4, 1808 in Warren, GA, USA
Immediate Family:	Son of Josiah Fendall Beall and Millicent Beall Husband of Amelia Jane Beall Father of Jeremiah Beall ; Frederick Beall ; Amelia Eleanor Rees ; Anna Beall ; Thaddeus Beall and 2 others
Occupation:	Brigadier General

- <http://www.geni.com/people/Thaddeus-Beall/6000000009608539266>

-

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

ROBERT BROOKE
MD
Ancestor of Mary Lee Brooke Scheid

Robert Brooke was born at London, England, 3 June 1602; the third son of Thomas Brooke (1561-1612) and his wife Susan Foster, and the grandson of Richard Brooke and Elizabeth Twyne.

Robert matriculated at Wadham College, Oxford, 28 April 1618, receiving the degree of Bachelor of Arts, 6 July 1620, and that of Master of Arts, 20 April 1624. He married first Mary Baker, daughter of Thomas Baker of Battle and Mary Engham. Mary died in 1634. Robert remarried the following year on 22 May 1635 to Mary Mainwaring, daughter of Roger Mainwaring, Doctor of Divinity and Dean of Worcester.

Robert Brooke arrived in Maryland, 30 June 1650 with his wife Mary, his ten children, Baker, Thomas, Charles, Roger, Robert, John, William, Francis, Mary and Ann, and twenty eight servants, all transported at his own cost and charge. With his two sons Baker and Thomas, he took the oath of fidelity to the Proprietary, 22 July 1649. A commission had been issued to him, dated at London, 20 September 1649, as commander of a county to be newly erected, and he had also a separate commission of the same date as a member of the Council of Maryland. He took the oath of office in the latter capacity, 22 July 1650. A new county, called Charles County, was duly erected and Robert Brooke was constituted its commander, 30 October 1650. When Maryland was reduced in 1652 by the Parliamentary Commissioners, he was placed at the head of the provisional council instituted by them, and served in this capacity from 20 March until 2 July 1652.

He was a member of council and commander of Charles County until 3 July 1654, when an order was passed revoking his commissions and nullifying the act erecting the county, in place of which a new county was erected called Calvert County.

According to the Brooke Family record: "He was the first that did seat the Patuxent, after twenty miles up the river at De la Brooke, and had one sone there, born 1651, called Basil, who died the same day. In 1652 he removed to Brooke Place, being right against De la Brooke; and on the 28th of November 1655, between 3 and 4 o'clock in the afternoon, had two children Eliza and Henry, twins. He departed this world the 20th day of July 1655, and lieth buried at Brooke Place Manor; and his wife Mary Brooke departed this life the 29th November 1663." The twins were, of course, born posthumously.

Reference:

Foster. Alumni Oxonienses. Maryland Land Office, Lib I, fol165-166; Md. Archives, iii, 237,240, 256, 259, 271-276, 308.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

FRANCIS POSEY

MD

Ancestor of Klonie Kunzel

In 1637, forty people were brought from England to Virginia by William Farrar. Among those forty was my ancestor, Francis Posey.

In 1640, Francis was rewarded with free land for bringing himself into Charles County Maryland.

In 1649, he was elected to the Lower House of Burgesses from St. Clement Hundred, St. Mary's, Maryland, and served in the government as an elected official for a few years.

He married Elizabeth, and had two children who lived to adulthood...Anne and John.

John Posey's daughter (either Mary or Elizabeth..uncertain) married Charles Allanson (evolved to Allison in later generations)

Charles' father, Thomas Allanson, had in 1659, been deeded one thousand acres of land in Maryland for transporting twenty people from England. He established Christian Temple Manor (now Smallwood State Park).

Charles and Mary (or Elizabeth) had one son, Thomas.

To this point, each generation had produced only one son.

Thomas married Barbary Burch in 1726 in Charles County, Maryland (interestingly the Burch name has come down through the generations of my extended Allison family) and were fortunate to have 5 sons.

Of the 5, my ancestor, Richard left the south...He moved on to Kentucky, then on to Indiana, where my grandmother, Annie Joslin Flenner was born.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

JOHN WORTHINGTON

MD

Ancestor of Betsy M. Flynn and Barbara Torrey Smith

John Worthington was born 12 January 1650 in Sharston Hall, Manchester, Lancashire County, England and baptized 5 October 1651. His father was the Reverend John Worthington, master of Jesus College and Vice-Chancellor of Cambridge.

John immigrated to America with his brother Samuel in 1664, arriving in Anne Arundel County, Maryland. In 1686 he bought, for forty pounds, Greenbury Forest, a plantation on the Severn River near what is now known as Annapolis, from Colonel Nicholas Greenbury.

In 1686 he married Sarah Howard, the daughter of Matthew and Sarah (Dorsey) Howard, his neighbors. They had five children: John, Thomas, William, Sarah and Charles.

The colonial records show that John led an active and useful life. He is listed as a gentleman, merchant, planter, member of the House of Burgesses, commissioned a Captain in the Severn Militia for service against the Nanticoke Indians, member of the "Quoram," Commissioner and Coroner of Anne Arundel County, Associate Justice of Anne Arundel County, and member of the Legislative Assembly.

He died in Annapolis, Maryland on 9 April 1701 and was buried on the farm of the late R. Tilghman Brice on the north banks of the Severn River opposite the United States Naval Academy. He was reinterred in the churchyard at St. Anne's Episcopal Church, Anne Arundel County, Maryland.



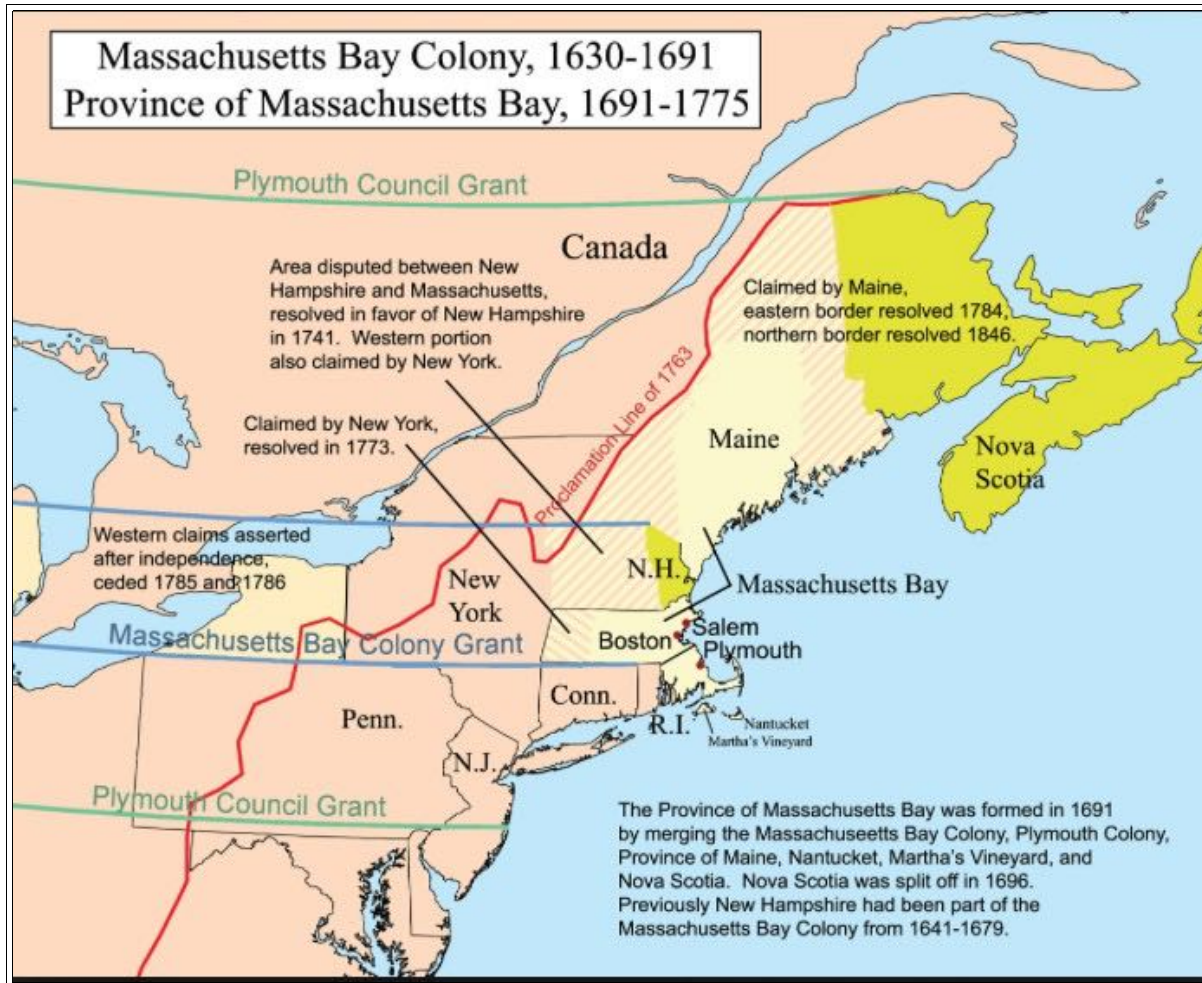
John Worthington Gravestone

Churchyard at St. Anne's Episcopal Church, Anne Arundel County, Maryland
home.comcast.net

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

Massachusetts



http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Massachusetts_Bay_Colony

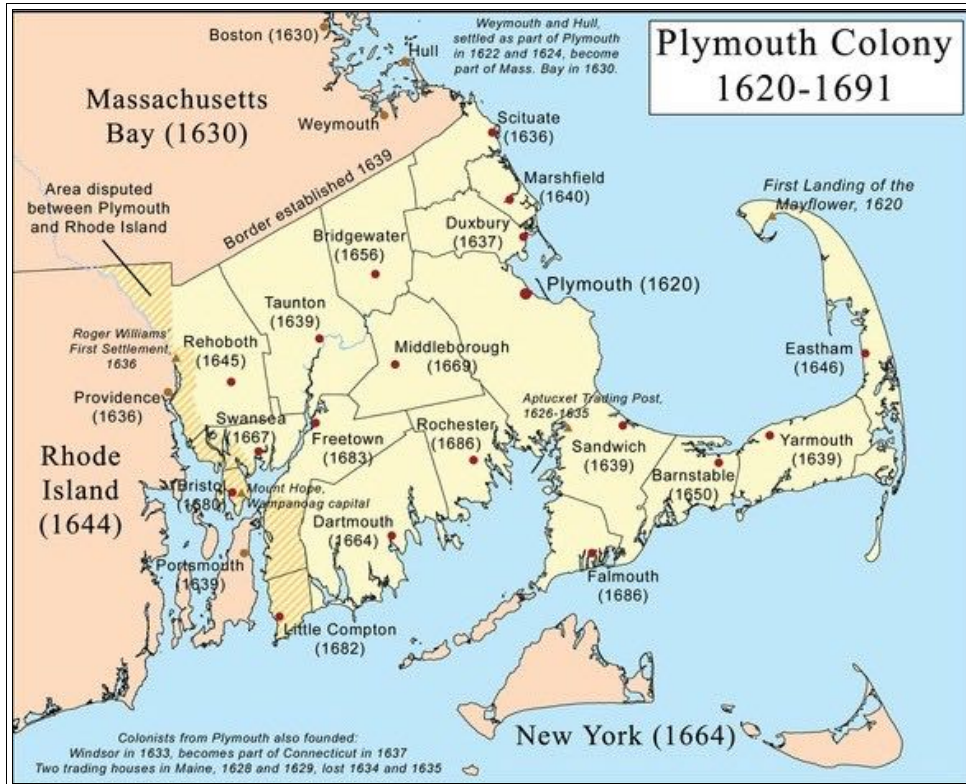
The Massachusetts Bay Colony was an English settlement on the east coast of North America in the 17th century, situated around the present-day cities of Salem and Boston. The territory administered by the colony included parts of what later became the US states of Massachusetts, Maine, New Hampshire, Rhode Island, and Connecticut.

Prior to the arrival of Europeans on the eastern shores of New England, the area around Massachusetts Bay was the territory of several Algonquian tribes, including the Massachusett, Nauset, and Wampanoag. The total Indian population in 1620 has been estimated to be seven thousand. This number was significantly larger as late as 1616; in later years, chroniclers interviewed Indians who described a major pestilence that killed one- to two-thirds of the population.

Although the colonists initially had peaceful relationships with the local native populations, frictions arose over cultural differences, which were further exacerbated by Dutch colonial expansion. King Philip's War (1675-1676) ravaged all of the New England colonies. The Indians of southern New England rose up against the colonists and were decisively defeated, although at great cost in life to the colonies. After the war, most of the natives in southern New England had been pacified, killed, or driven away.

Early in the 17th century, several European explorers charted the area. Plans for the first permanent British settlements on the east coast of North America began in late 1606, when King James I of England formed two joint stock companies. The owners of the Massachusetts Bay Company founded the colony. In 1624, the Plymouth Council for New England established a small fishing village at Cape Ann. The Cape Ann settlement was not profitable, and the financial backers terminated their support by the end of 1625. The second attempt, begun in 1628, was successful, with about 20,000 people migrating to New England in the 1630s. For the next ten years, there was a steady exodus of Puritans from England to Massachusetts and the neighboring colonies, a phenomenon now called the Great Migration .

Plymouth Colony



1620-1691

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Plymouth_Colony

Mayflower Compact

IN YE NAME OF GOD, AMEN.

We whole names are underwritten, the loyal subjets of our dread fovereigne Lord, King James, by ye grace of God, of Great Britaine, France and Ireland, King, defender of ye faith, etc., have- ing undertaken for ye glory of God and advancement of ye Chris- tian faith, and honour of our King and countrie, a voyage to plant ye firt Colonie in ye Northerne parts of Virginia, doe by these prefents solemnly, and mutually, in ye prefence of God, and of one another, covenant and combine ourselves togeather into a civil body politik for our better ordering and preservation and furtherance of ye end aforefaid, and by vertue hearof to enacte, constitute and frame such just and equal lawes, ordinances, acts, constitutions and offices from time to time, as shall be thought most meete and con- venient for ye generall good of ye Colonie, unto which we promise all due submiffion and obedience. In witnes whereof we have hereunder subscribed our names at Cape-Codd ye 11 of November, in ye year of ye raigne of our fovereigne Lord, King James of En- gland, France and Ireland, ye eighteenth. and of Scotland ye fiftie- fourth. Ano Dom. 1620.

- | | | |
|------------------------|----------------------|--------------------------|
| 1. John Carver, | 15. Edward Tilley, | 29. Degory Priest, |
| 2. William Bradford, | 16. John Tilley, | 30. Thomas Williams, |
| 3. Edward Winslow, | 17. Francis Cooke, | 31. Gilbert Winslow, |
| 4. William Brewster, | 18. Thomas Rogers, | 32. Edmund Margeson, |
| 5. Isaac Allerton, | 19. Thomas Tinker, | 33. Peter Brown, |
| 6. Myles Standish, | 20. John Rigdale, | 34. Richard Britteridge, |
| 7. John Alden, | 21. Edward Fuller, | 35. George Soule, |
| 8. Samuel Fuller, | 22. John Turner, | 36. Richard Clarke, |
| 9. Christopher Martin, | 23. Francis Eaton, | 37. Richard Gardiner, |
| 10. William Mullins, | 24. James Chilton, | 38. John Allerton, |
| 11. William White, | 25. John Crackston, | 39. Thomas English, |
| 12. Richard Warren, | 26. John Billington, | 40. Edward Dotey, |
| 13. John Howland, | 27. Moses Fletcher, | 41. Edward Lister, |
| 14. Stephen Hopkins, | 28. John Goodman, | |

MAYFLOWER COMPACT

<http://www.leadershipethicsonline.com/american-founders/mayflower-compact/>

[Click on Specific Ancestor for Biography](#)

JOHN ALDEN Ancestor of Betsey Monsell

THOMAS ANDREWS Ancestor of Margaret West Benton

DR WILLIAM AVERY Ancestor of Ann Avery Todd

BENJAMIN BANCROFT Ancestor of Georgia Kohlmeier
Benjamin Bancroft Gravestone

WILLIAM BRADFORD Ancestor of Betty Brayshay and Mickey Mitchell

WILLIAM BREWSTER Ancestor of Kerry Byerly, Elizabeth Fleming, Margaret Cary
Lieb and Carol Jean Ninteman

- **Mayflower**
- **Mayflower Compact**
- **Plymouth Bay Colony**

OBADIAH BRUEN Ancestor of Nancy Knox Brown and Mary Marvin Knox Norris

JOHN CAMPBELL Ancestor of Patty Duckett

SAMUEL CHAPIN Ancestor of Lorraine Schmalenberger

- **The Purtian**

ROGER CLAPP Ancestor of Ellen Bergman

- **Massachusetts Bay Colony**

FRANCIS COOKE Ancestor of Nancy Bildsoe and Jan Quigley

THOMAS CUSHMAN Ancestor of Louise Reynolds Haugh and Ann M. Patterson

- **the ship Fortune**

AMMI RUHAMAH CUTTER Ancestor of Edith Martin Cox

NICHOLAS DANFORTH Ancestor of Martha McCarter

THOMAS DUDLEY Ancestor of Cynthia Goodger

EDWARD FULLER Ancestor of Rosemary Scalpone; Submitted by Anne Marshall

MATTHEW FULLER Ancestor of Minerva Kunzel

DR. SAMUEL FULLER Ancestor of Theodosia Suman Kempf

EDMUND GOODENOW Ancestor of Kathryn King Dabbs

- **Graves of Edmund and Anne Goodenow**
- **Vital Records of Sudbury MA**
- **the ship Confidence**

JOSEPH HAMMOND Ancestor of Constance Hammond Branscomb

JOHN HATHAWAY Ancestor of Karen M. Ladner and Patricia F. Ladner

FRANCIS HIGGINSON Ancestor of Barbara Higginson Evans

JOHN HOWLAND Ancestor of Nancy Payne

JOSEPH KELLOGG Ancestor of Linda Strauss

HENRY KINGMAN Ancestor of Linda Lee Dowdy

ELEAZER LAWRENCE Ancestor of Charlotte Taylor Rowe

WILLIAM LEWIS Ancestor of Virginia Knowles O'Grady Hammond

BENJAMIN LYNDE Ancestor of Emily Wilson

- **Chief Justice Lynde by John Smybert**

FRANCIS PEABODY Ancestor of Jean Wirick

- **Passenger Ship Planter**
- **Francis Peabody Signature**

EDMUND RICE Ancestor of Sue Elizabeth Busby

THOMAS ROGERS Ancestor of Linda Balogh and Jeanne Rodger Gruenwald

JONATHAN SANDERSON Ancestor of Alice Price Geddes

- **Minutemen**

WILLIAM SARGENT Ancestor of Elizabeth Hill Carson and Barbara Edward

RICHARD WARREN Ancestor of Mrs. Keith Wilcox Adams

PEREGRINE WHITE Ancestor of Dorothy Alderson Starkey

WILLIAM WHITE Ancestor of Marion Knowles

- **Mayflower in Plymouth Harbor by William Halsall (1882)**
- **Signing the Mayflower Compact 1620**

LT FRANCIS WHITMORE Ancestor of Virginia Mary Coleman Brunson

HENRY WITHINGTON Ancestor of Susan Ahlering, Jeanne Frost and Alison Gildred

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

JOHN ALDEN

MA

Ancestor of Betsey Monsell

Birth: John Alden was born in England around 1599. Death: He died in Duxbury on September 12, 1687.

Ship: Mayflower, 1620

Life in England: John Alden was hired in Southampton, Hampshire to be the cooper (barrel-maker) aboard the Mayflower during her 1620 voyage. His town of origin is unknown. According to historian Nathaniel Philbrick, due to Alden's useful skills, the colonists encouraged him to remain with them in America during the voyage.

Life in New England: John Alden lived in Plymouth until 1632, when he moved to Duxbury. He served the colony in many capacities, including Governor's Assistant, Deputy Governor and Treasurer. He actively participated in Plymouth's trade on the Kennebec River in Maine, and in 1634 he and John Howland became involved in a dispute there which left two men dead. Alden was arrested in Boston while the controversy was investigated, and later released. John Alden received many land grants during his life but gave most of this land to his sons. By 1660, he was "low in his estate" and received "a small gratuity, the sum of ten pounds" from the Plymouth Court. His inventory totaled only £49 17s 6d. in movable goods.

Family: About 1623 John Alden married Priscilla Mullins, the only survivor of the Mullins family on the Mayflower, and had ten children. Priscilla died in Duxbury between 1651 and Alden's death in 1687. He was the last survivor of the signers of the Mayflower Compact.

Children of John Alden and Priscilla Mullins:

- Elizabeth was born about 1624.
- John was born about 1626.
- Joseph was born about 1628.
- Priscilla was born about 1630.
- Jonathan was born about 1632.
- Sarah was born about 1634.
- Ruth was born about 1636.
- Mary was born about 1638.
- Rebecca was born about 1640.
- David was born about 1642.

Source: www.plymouthancestors.org a collaboration between Plimoth Plantation and New England Genealogical Society.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

THOMAS ANDREWS

MA

Ancestor of Margaret West Benton

In December 1994, a diver in Anse Aux Bouleaux, Quebec, discovered the wreckage of a ship in less than three meters of water and 100 meters from Shore. At this point the St. Lawrence River narrows, resulting in strong currents where there are reefs and sandbars, which push ships toward the shore in big storms. The ship that the diver located was the *Elizabeth and Mary*. It had disappeared after having been last spotted on 3 November 1690. It is the oldest wreck discovered in that area.

The *Elizabeth and Mary* was part of an expedition led by Sir William Phips. It included 2,300 men from the New England Colonies aboard 32 ships. Their goal was to capture Quebec. This expedition was not successful, but all of the ships were accounted for except the *Elizabeth and Mary*. There were 50 militiamen from Dorchester, a village north of Boston, on board. One of them was Captain Thomas Andrews. From Dorchester there were a total of 70 men on the expedition. Dorchester's total population was estimated to be only 200 to 500, depending on the source of information.

Andrews was probably born in England in 1632, and came to America from Dorchester there. He married Ruth, who died in 1732 in her 97th year. Their daughter Elizabeth married Joseph Joy in May 1690, not long before her father left on that fateful expedition to Quebec.

Reference:

The Siege of Quebec 1690: the Story of a Sunken Ship. The Montreal Museum of History and Archaeology, 2000.

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

DR. WILLIAM AVERY
MA
Ancestor of Ann Avery Todd

Dr. William Avery was born in Barkham, County of Berkshire, England in 1622, the son of Robert and Joanne Avery.

In 1650 he crossed the Atlantic, bringing his wife Margaret and three children, Mary, William and Robert. They were among the earliest settlers in Dedham, Massachusetts, southwest of Boston at the source of the Charles River. They built their home under the branches of a massive Oak tree that became known as "The Avery Oak" and is still the centerpiece on ???

Dr. William Avery was the earliest educated physician who is known to have taken up residence in Dedham. He appears to have been well educated, a man of benevolence and especially a patron of learning. It is known that in his life he made liberal donations to various public charities and institutions among which were The Boston Latin School and "the college at Cambridge" (Harvard).

Other children born to William and Margaret Avery after settling in Dedham were Jonathan, Rachel, Hannah and Ebenezer.

He served as a Lieutenant of Dedham Company in 1673.

After the death of his first wife he moved to Boston in 1680 and married his second wife, Mary Woodmansey Tapping. He died on March 18, 1686 at age 66 and is buried in King's Chapel Burial Ground, Boston, near and facing the railing on Tremont Street.

Dr. Avery's sons and grandsons also were very active and distinguished in Massachusetts, including one of the first ministers on Cape Cod and his grandson who was captured by the Indians during the French and Indian War. He wrote of his ghastly experience (staked to the ground to be beheaded as were his two companions) but then kept on and dressed as an Indian to reinforce their diminishing forces. He wrote this when he was 89 years of age and remembered every detail.

Source: "The Avery Family Record, published in 1892

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

BENJAMIN BANCROFT

MA

Ancestor of Georgia Kohlmeier

Birth: Sep. 29, 1724, Charlestown, Suffolk County, Massachusetts

Death: Oct. 27, 1804, Groton, Middlesex County Massachusetts

Son of Benjamin and Anna (Lawrence) Bancroft. Husband of Alice Tarbell, married on October 18, 1749 in Groton, MA.

Parents:

Benjamin Bancroft (1701 - 1787)

Anna *Lawrence* Bancroft (1702 - 1790)

Spouse:

Alice *Tarbell* Bancroft (1730 - 1781)

Children:

Benjamin Bancroft (1750 - 1828)*

William Bancroft (1756 - 1832)*

Thaddeus Bancroft (1756 - 1784)*

Samuel Bancroft (1764 - 1822)*

*calculated relationship

Bancroft, Benjamin 1701-1787 Charlestown & Groton, MA

1. Anna (Lawrence)

Captain, Groton Company

MA Archives, Muster Roll Index, XCIX: 442.

NSCDA Register of Ancestors

Not in Lineage Index (IDDL)

Burial: [Old Burying Ground](#), Groton, Middlesex County, Massachusetts



Benjamin Bancroft Gravestone
Old Burial Ground, Groton MA

[-http://www.findagrave.com/cgi-bin/fg.cgi?page=pv&GRid=28814241&PIpi=12334666](http://www.findagrave.com/cgi-bin/fg.cgi?page=pv&GRid=28814241&PIpi=12334666)

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

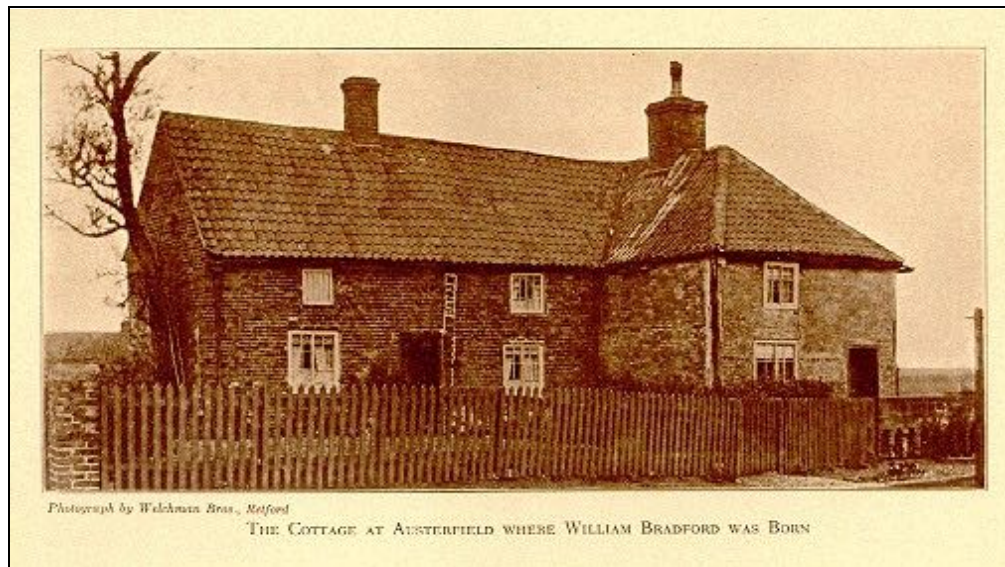
—

WILLIAM BRADFORD
MA
Ancestor of Betty Brayshay and Mickey Mitchell

19 March 1599 - 9 May 1657

William Bradford was a founder and later governor of the Plymouth Colony settlement. In 1630 he began to compile his two-volume "Of Plymouth Plantation" one of the most important written accounts of the first European settlement in New England. Many of his letters, poems and other writings also survive.

Born into a prosperous Yorkshire family, Bradford's mother, father and grandfather had died before he was 7.



The Cottage at Austerfield where William Bradford was Born

He was sent to live with uncles who expected him to do heavy farm work. He began to show interest in nonconformist religious causes at a young age and joined the Separatist church in Scrooby at the age of 17.

In 1603 King James I became King and denounced all Protestant reform. In 1607 the Separatist Scrooby congregation that included William Brewster, Rev. John Robinson and William Bradford left for Holland, first to Amsterdam and then Leiden in their quest for religious freedom. The Brewster family took in the orphaned Bradford. After eleven years the Separatists became concerned that the group was assimilating into the Dutch culture. That prompted them to make plans for a life in America.

After much intrigue and bad luck the group left Plymouth months late aboard the Mayflower. The crossing was rough and first landing came in what is now Massachusetts. The male passengers drew up and signed the Mayflower Compact before they left the ship in Provincetown Harbor. Bradford, now married to Dorothy, left their son John in Holland. Tragically Dorothy fell over the side of the Mayflower while it was anchored in at the tip of Cape Cod and drowned. Son John joined his widowed father in Provincetown, married and died in Norwich Connecticut.

Bradford was named Governor of Plymouth after the death of John Carver and elected to twenty-nine one-year terms as governor of the Plymouth Plantation between 1622 and 1656. He acted as chief magistrate, high judge and treasurer as well as presiding over the deliberations of the legislature of the community called the General Court. Under his leadership the colony remained tolerant of dissent and did

not restrict the civic privileges to church members. Thus Presbyterians like William Vassal and renegades like Roger Williams resided in the colony without pressure to conform.

In 1623 he married the widow Alice Carpenter Southworth. The couple had three children, William, Mercy and Joseph who all lived to marry and have children. Bradford died 9 May 1657. He is buried along with other family members on Burial Hill in Plymouth.

William Bradford is the ancestor of Mrs. James Brayshay, Mrs Thomas Mitchell, Julia Child, Clint Eastwood, George Eastman, Hugh Hefner, and General George McClelland Christopher Reeves Supreme Court Chief Justice William Rehnquist and Noah Webster.

References: Memorial of William Bradford. Find a Grave
Eugene Stratton,(1986)Plymouth Colony: its History and People 1620-1691. Salt Lake City .

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

WILLIAM BREWSTER

MA

Ancestor of Kerry Byerly, Elizabeth Fleming, Margaret Cary Lieb and Carol Jean Ninteman

William Brewster, son of William and Mary Brewster, was born in Scrooby, England around 1566. As a young man he studied Latin and Greek, attending Cambridge University briefly. After serving as a highly trusted and honored assistant to Queen Elizabeth's secretary of state, he returned to Scrooby as postmaster. There he became one of the original members of the religious Separatist group, which later became the Pilgrim Church. While in Scrooby he married a lady named Mary, and their first three children were born there: Jonathan, Patience and Fear.

In 1608, following one failed attempt that landed him in jail, his religious group immigrated to Holland, where Brewster, Mary, and the three children lived for twelve years. Here he served as Elder of the Pilgrim Congregation. He had a very hard time supporting his growing family in Leyden, where he worked at various jobs including printing, teaching English, and manual labor in the fields (for which he was poorly suited). Three more children were born here, one of whom died in infancy. While in Holland he published religious pamphlets critical of the Church of England, and thus became a fugitive from the King of England.

In 1620 Brewster, with his wife Mary and two youngest children Love and Wrestling, together with others from the Pilgrim community in Holland, immigrated to America on the *Mayflower*.



Mayflower

<http://palisadespete.wordpress.com/2012/11/22/10-facts-about-the-mayflower-and-its-passengers/>

IN YE NAME OF GOD, AMEN.

We whose names are underwritten, the loyal subjects of our dread fovereigne Lord, King James, by ye grace of God, of Great Britaine, France and Ireland, King, defender of ye faith, etc., having undertaken for ye glory of God and advancement of ye Christian faith, and honour of our King and countrie, a voyage to plant ye first Colonie in ye Northerne parts of Virginia, doe by these presents solemnly, and mutually, in ye prefence of God, and of one another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil body politick for our better ordering and preservation and furtherance of ye end aloresaid, and by vertue hearof to enacte, constitute and frame such just and equal lawes, ordinances, acts, constitutions and offices from time to time, as thall be thought most meete and convenient for ye generall good of ye Colonie, unto which we promise all due submiffion and obedience. In witnes whereof we have hereunder subscribed our names at Cape-Codd ye 11 of November, in ye year of ye raigne of our fovereigne Lord, King James of England, France and Ireland, ye eighteenth, and of Scotland ye fiftie-fourth. Ano Dom. 1620.

- | | | |
|------------------------|----------------------|--------------------------|
| 1. John Carver, | 15. Edward Tilley, | 29. Degory Priest, |
| 2. William Bradford, | 16. John Tilley, | 30. Thomas Williams, |
| 3. Edward Winslow, | 17. Francis Cooke, | 31. Gilbert Winslow, |
| 4. William Brewster, | 18. Thomas Rogers, | 32. Edmund Margeson, |
| 5. Isaac Allerton, | 19. Thomas Tinker, | 33. Peter Brown, |
| 6. Myles Standish, | 20. John Rigdale, | 34. Richard Britteridge, |
| 7. John Alden, | 21. Edward Fuller, | 35. George Soule, |
| 8. Samuel Fuller, | 22. John Turner, | 36. Richard Clarke, |
| 9. Christopher Martin, | 23. Francis Eaton, | 37. Richard Gardiner, |
| 10. William Mullins, | 24. James Chilton, | 38. John Allerton, |
| 11. William White, | 25. John Crackston, | 39. Thomas English, |
| 12. Richard Warren, | 26. John Billington, | 40. Edward Dotey, |
| 13. John Howland, | 27. Moses Fletcher, | 41. Edward Lister, |
| 14. Stephen Hopkins, | 28. John Goodman, | |

MAYFLOWER COMPACT

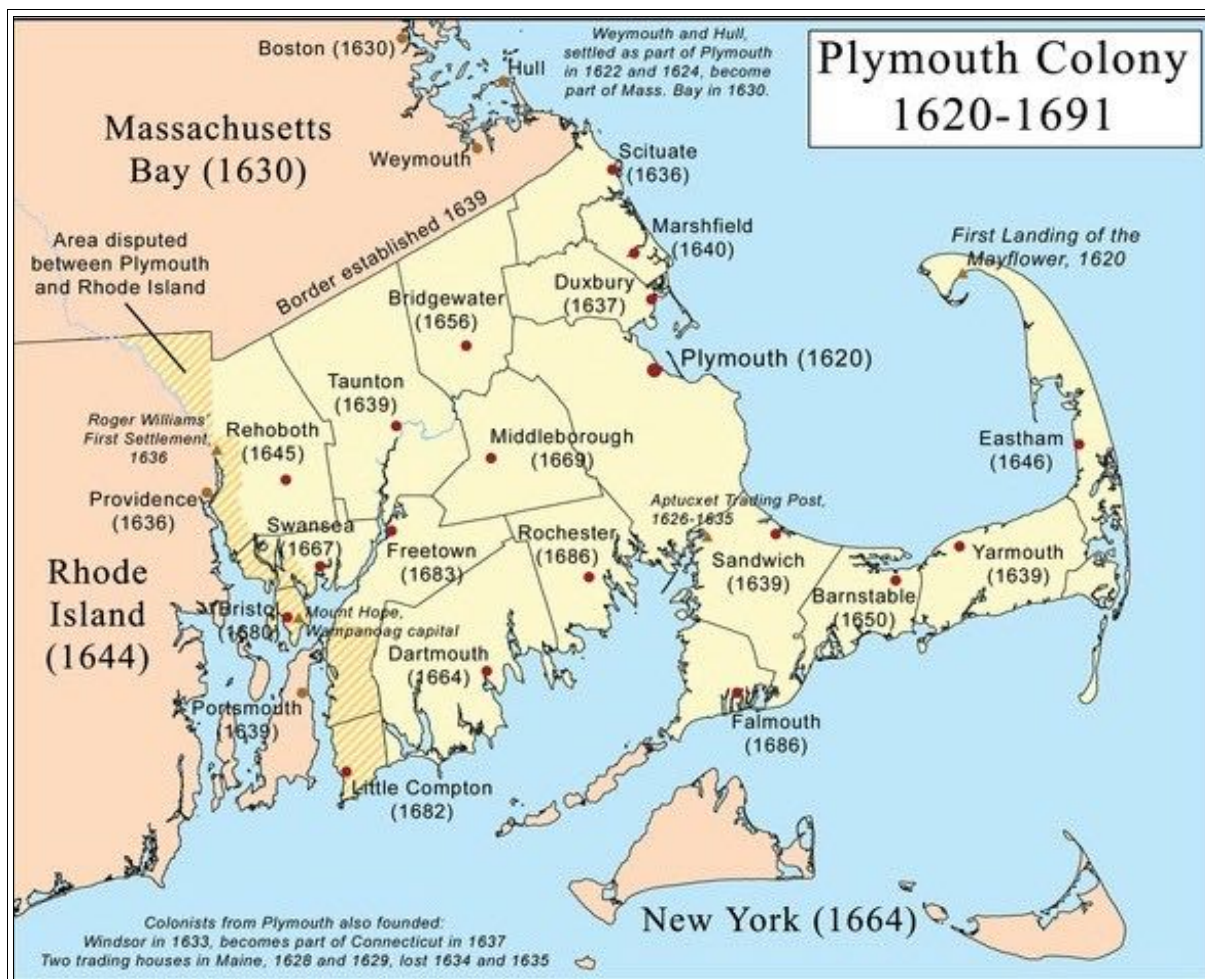
Mayflower Compact

<http://www.leadershipethicsonline.com/american-founders/mayflower-compact/>

Jonathan, Fear and Patience followed on a later ship. In the absence of an ordained minister, Brewster became the much loved and respected religious leader of Plymouth Colony.

Being in his early fifties, he was the oldest *Mayflower* passenger to participate in the first Thanksgiving in the new country. He also was a signer of the Mayflower Compact.

Plymouth Colony



1620-1691

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Plymouth_Colony

Mary died seven years later, in 1627, but William lived on until 1644, dying at the ripe old age of seventy-eight on 10 April in Plymouth. He outlived all but two of his six children, Jonathan and Love.

William Bradford, in describing William Brewster, said: "For his personal abilities, he was qualified above many; he was wise and discreet and well spoken, having a grave and deliberate utterance, of a very cheerful spirit, very sociable and pleasant among his friends, of an humble and modest mind, of a peaceable disposition, undervaluing himself and his own abilities... inoffensive and innocent in his life and conversation... he was tender-hearted, and compassionate of such as were in misery, but especially of such as had been of good estate and rank, and were fallen into want and poverty, either for goodness and religion's sake, or by the injury and oppression of others..."

While he died without a will, a list of his possessions (minus his several hundred books in English and Latin, and his personal clothing) follows: "a dagger and knife, a tobaccoe case, 1 case

of bottles, 2 boxes, rapier, 2 hammers, 1 earthen pott, a feather bed and bolster, 1 blankett, a little table, settle bed, 2 chaines, 2 old shares and 2 Coulter, 1 yoeck of oxen 10 years old, 2 yoeck of oxen yeonger, 1 two yere old stere, 1 old cow, 1 read cow, 1 yeong cowes, 1 lame cowe, 2 yearling heiffers, 1 calf unweaned, half a yeong sowe, 1 shoate and a half, a pigg."

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

OBADIAH BRUEN

MA

Ancestor of Nancy Knox Brown and Mary Marvin Knox Norris

Obadiah Bruen was born in Bruen-Stapleford, England on Christmas Day in 1606. The earliest known record of him in America is March 2, 1641, in Green Harbor, (now Marshfield) Massachusetts. He later settled in Cape Anne in Gloucester. Next to the Reverend Blinman, Obadiah was considered the person of most importance in the community. In 1643 he was elected to act as a commissioner to settle small claims. He also acted as the town's representative, and filled the office of town clerk until he moved to Pequot, (New London) Connecticut in 1651.

After holding numerous offices and being granted numerous tracts of land, some of which he sold, he was elected recorder of the town of Pequot in 1657, an office he held for the next sixteen years. In this position, he usually moderated the town meetings Obadiah sat on a court of investigation as a commissioner with two others, also appointed by Governor John Winthrop. Apparently he was held in high esteem as the colony's general assembly gave him more power to grant warrants in the town as the occasion rose. In 1663 he also was appointed one of the commissioners to settle the trouble between the settlers and the Niantic Indians.

During the sixteen years Obadiah lived in this plantation, he was a more involved public servant than any other citizen. He was a townsman for fifteen successive years, and for fourteen of those he was the first townsman and moderator. Usually he was a member of all committees for granting lands, building the meeting-house and helping to solve differences. In this Connecticut colony he was one of the nineteen important men who petitioned King Charles II to grant a charter to it, and was one of the grantees of it on April 20, 1662.

In spite of his standing in the community, he and many others, became so dissatisfied when the colony forced the people on the Sound to join them against their will that they signed the "Fundamental Agreements". They and their families then prepared to move from New London to Newark, New Jersey in 1666. Obadiah sold most of his real estate while preparing to move.

That Obadiah and others would leave the colony in Connecticut after occupying the most important positions for many years, and establishing comfortable homes, and leaving all that they had accomplishing is remarkable. With The Reverend Abraham Pierson they planned to establish a Congregationalist church and a commonwealth in which no one but a member could hold office, either civil or military.

In his new town, Obadiah chose to relinquish the high position that he formerly held in order to be of practical help in establishing the new settlement. He was active in all of the important affairs of the town. For his unselfish service Obadiah was granted rate free in September of 1676.

The exact date of Obadiah's death is not known, but it is thought to have been in the year 1681. His widow, Sara, was still living in 1697. The children of Obadiah and Sara Bruen were Mary, Sarah, Rebecca, Hannah, and John, our lineal ancestor.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

JOHN CAMPBELL
MA
Ancestor of Ancestor of Patty Duckett

John Campbell (1653, Scotland – March 1728) was a Boston editor. He founded the first regularly published newspaper in British America, *The Boston News-Letter*.

Campbell was one of a family or kin of Boston booksellers and public officials whose relationships are not determinable. He arrived in Boston some time before 1698, and in 1702 was appointed postmaster.^[1] As postmaster, he was the news center of the New England provinces, and in 1703 was writing "news letters" of European news to Governor Fitz-John Winthrop of Connecticut, and perhaps to other governors, made up of information received from arriving travelers, etc., with inferences as to New England policy. In 1704 he concluded to make these public and for sale; and on 24 April issued the first newspaper in America, *The Boston News-Letter*, which he edited until 1722. It was not the first attempt at a newspaper, but the first to become an established concern.



The Boston News-Letter First Issue
http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Boston_News-Letter

In 1719 he was deprived of the postmastership. He was justice of the peace for Suffolk County for some years.

- [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Campbell_\(editor\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Campbell_(editor))

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

SAMUEL CHAPIN

MA

Ancestor of Lorraine Schmalenberger

Samuel Chapin (bp October 8, 1598 – November 11, 1675) was a prominent early settler of Springfield, Massachusetts. He served the town as selectman, magistrate and deacon (in the Massachusetts Bay Colony there was little separation between the church and government). Chapin is best known today as the subject of the Augustus Saint-Gaudens sculpture entitled *Deacon Samuel Chapin* (also known as *The Puritan*).



Deacon Samuel Chapin, (also known as *The Puritan*). This small version in the Metropolitan Museum of Art is based on the large-scale monument completed by Augustus Saint-Gaudens in Springfield, Massachusetts in 1887.

Life

Chapin was born in Paignton (near Torquay), Devon, England, to John Chapin and Phillipe Easton. His baptism is recorded as October 8, 1598.

On February 9, 1623/4, Samuel married Cicely Penny. They had seven children: David, Catherine, Sarah, Josiah, Henry, Japhet and Hannah. The oldest five children were born in England and the last two in Massachusetts, Japhet in Roxbury and Hannah in Springfield.

He immigrated to America either with or shortly after William Pynchon, between 1630 and 1635, and became a full member of John Eliot's congregation at Roxbury (later incorporated into the city of Boston). The Chapins lived in Roxbury till the close of the year 1642, as on 15 of October of that year Japhet was baptized there. Soon after this, however, they must have moved to Springfield, for we find them there in January 1642/3.

On 26 September 1644, Samuel Chapin was chosen for a committee of five to order the prudential affairs of the town. This prudential committee was in reality the first board of Selectmen in Springfield. The Selectmen, or Townsmen as they were sometimes called, were generally five in number. They were elected by a vote of all the freemen of the town at the town meeting, and were to serve for one year. They

settled disputes, heard complaints, admitted inhabitants, regulated highways, bridges, fences, finances, etc., and had a general supervision over all the affairs of the town.

Samuel Chapin held the office of Selectman continuously from 26 September 1644, to 22 November 1652, when having taken the oath of a Commissioner, he could no longer serve as Selectman.

After the Massachusetts General Court's displeasure with William Pyncheon's heresy, Pyncheon had to resign as the magistrate of Springfield in 1651. The office was taken up by his son-in-law, Henry Smith but in the summer of 1652 Pyncheon and Smith left for England. In October 1652, Chapin, Pyncheon's son John and another Pyncheon son-in-law, Elizur Holyoke, were appointed town Commissioners (essentially a board of magistrates). They had full power and authority to govern the inhabitants of Springfield; to hear and determine all cases and offenses, both civil and criminal, and to inflict all punishments not reaching life, limb, or banishment; to give oaths to constables; and to examine witnesses on oath. He apparently held office as a commissioner until 1660/1. Chapin then alternated between being a selectman (1660 and 1663) and a commissioner (1662, 1664 and 1665).

Chapin was actively interested in the church and appears to have been a deacon as early as 1650.

Chapin died in Springfield in November 1675 shortly after the town was devastated in King Phillip's War. In October 1675 Chief Metacomet (known as "King Philip") visited the Agawam Indians (of the Pocumtuc tribe) residing within the town and incited them to mount an attack on Springfield. Despite the inhabitants being warned of the attack many of the houses and barns were burned to the ground, as were its saw and grist mills. Cicely survived him by just over seven years, dying in February 1682. All their children grew to adulthood, married, and produced a total of 72 grandchildren, most of whom grew up and married.

Commemoration

Main article: The Puritan (Springfield)

In 1881, Chester W. Chapin, a railroad tycoon, congressman and Chapin descendant, commissioned master sculptor Augustus St. Gaudens to produce a work memorializing his ancestor. The sculpture, most commonly known as *The Puritan*, is currently sited in Springfield's Merrick Park. It emphasizes the piety, and perhaps moral rigidity, of the country's religious founders—evident in the sculpted Chapin's proud pose, certain stride, flowing cape and hefty Bible, as well as his assertive use of a walking cane. Smaller variants of the same work can be found in several museums.

Descendants

Chapin had many famous direct descendants, including United States Presidents Grover Cleveland and William Howard Taft, Canadian Prime Minister Richard Bedford Bennett, abolitionist and author Harriet Beecher Stowe, abolitionists Henry Ward Beecher and John Brown, financier J.P. Morgan, poet and playwright T.S. Eliot, auto industry pioneer Roy D. Chapin and auto executive Roy D. Chapin Jr., American painter James Ormsbee Chapin, and James Ormsbee's son, jazz drummer Jim Chapin, grandsons, singers Harry Chapin & Tom Chapin, and great-granddaughter, singer Jen Chapin.

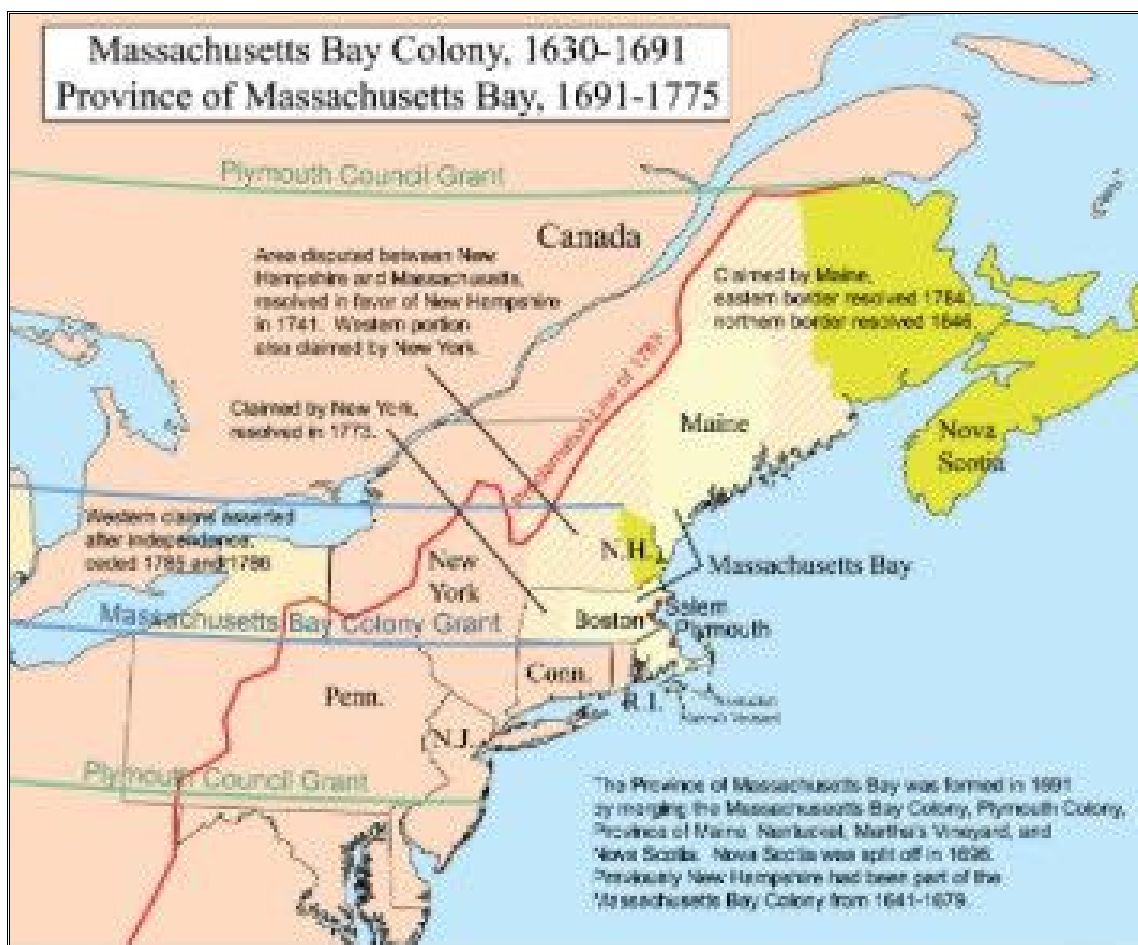
- http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Samuel_Chapin

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

ROGER CLAPP
MA
Ancestor of Ellen Bergman

Captain Roger Clapp sailed to New England on the ship Mary and John, Captain Squeb, Master, from Plymouth, England. They arrived at Nantasket, Massachusetts on 20 March 1630. The passengers of this trip became known as the Dorchester Company, and were the first settlers of Dorchester, Massachusetts Bay Colony.



Massachusetts Bay Colony, 1630-1691

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Massachusetts_Bay_Colony

Roger was the son of William Johan Channon Clapp of Salcombe Regis, Devonshire, England. According to a deposition filed by Captain Clapp on 31 October 1671, he was born on 2 April 1609. He was one of seven children, five boys and two girls. He was about 21 years of age when he arrived. Captain Clapp, in his own memoirs writes, "Oh, the hunger that many suffered and saw no hope in an eye of reason to be supplied, only by clams, mussels and fish. We did quickly build boats and some went fishing. But bread was with many a very scarce thing, and flesh of all kinds as scarce."

According to Clapp Family genealogy, the Roger Clapp house, built in 1633, by Roger Clapp, was rebuilt and enlarged by his cousin, Captain Lemuel Clapp in 1767. The house was

acquired by the Dorchester Historical Society in 1945, from Frank Lemuel Clapp. It still stands today at 195 Boston Street, Dorchester MA 02125. It is listed on the National Register of Historic Places.

On 6 November 1633, Roger married Joanna Ford, the daughter of Thomas Ford, of Dorchester, England. The two families had sailed aboard the *Mary and John* in 1630. Joanna was born on 8 June 1617 and was only 16 years, 5 months old at the time of her marriage. Roger built his family a house near the old causeway road leading to Little Neck, now South Boston. A passageway now called Willow Court led from the road to the house. This house was still there, much enlarged, about 200 years later.

Roger was a soldier, and held many offices in the town, among them, the post of deputy to the General Court. He was a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, serving as 2nd Sergeant in 1647, Lieutenant in 1655 and was a member for many years. Roger served several terms as select the first time when he was only 28 years of age. As selectman, he was allowed to perform marriages for other persons.

It is said that Roger was a remarkably industrious man, a man of good judgment, who was frequently asked to be an overseer of wills. He was meek and humble despite his honors and "Of a very peaceable spirit, not apt to resent injuries; but when he thought the honor of god was concerned or just and lawful authority opposed, he was forward enough to exert himself." Such affection was given him that when he was ill with a severe sickness in 1672, the people of Dorchester held a fast 'to beg his life of God" and when he subsequently recovered, they held a day of thanksgiving. As to his natural temper, it is said "he was of a cheerful and pleasant disposition, courteous and kind in his behavior, free and familiar in his conversation, yet attended with a proper reservedness, and he had a gravity of prescience that commanded respect from others."

In 1644, when the first regular organization of the military took place, he was the Lieutenant of the Dorchester Company. He later became Captain of the Company. On 10 August 1665, he was appointed by the General Court as Captain of the Castle (now Fort Independence) in Boston Harbor. He had held that office for 21 years when he reached the age of 77. He resigned that position upon the turn of political events which occurred when Sir Edmund Andros became Governor. In a report given by Mr. James Blake, Jr. in 1731, he said Captain Clapp resigned because "some things were required of him which were grievous to his pious soul."

Roger left the Castle on 24 September 1686. He spent the rest of his life in Boston, where he died on 2 February 1691, aged 81 years. His funeral was conducted with much parade and signs of respect; military officers, the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company preceded the corpse. The Governor and the General Court followed the relations as mourners, and guns fired at the Castle.

His will, written by his own hand, left a home at the south end of Boston, with land which was bounded on the east "by the sea" and other extensive holdings. He will be remembered as a founder of the Church in Dorchester, where he remained a member for 60 years or more. His soldiers remembered him as a kind and affectionate commander. He encouraged them by precept and example to be worthy citizens, "he enlisted none but pious as well as brave men." He left an additional legacy. In 1731, the memoirs he had written in 1676 were edited and published by James Blake, Jr. Captain Clapp left a detailed, historical account of the life of our early settlers.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

FRANCIS COOKE

MA

Ancestor of Nancy Bildsoe, Elizabeth Bildsoe Bluhm and Jan Quigley

No birth records exist for my Pilgrim forebear, Francis Cooke. However, assumptions drawn from later records indicate he was born c.1583, in England—probably in the Canterbury or Norwich area. He came to the Netherlands, probably c. 1602, a nineteen year old bachelor from England identified as a woolcomber (Leyden being a textile center). Records show him marrying Hester Mahieu in 1603. She was from a French Walloon family, Protestant exiles probably from Lille who had fled to Canterbury, then to Leyden. Francis and Hester's marriage took place in the Leyden Walloon Reformed Church, half a dozen years before the Pilgrim church moved into Holland. Four children were born to them in Leyden.

Their ensuing years in Leyden are short on records, but we do know that Francis and his first son, John, now thirteen, boarded the *Speedwell* in Delfshaven, Holland, and set out for America in 1620, transferring to the *Mayflower* that September in England. On arrival in Provincetown, Massachusetts, on November 11, 1620, Francis and forty other passengers signed the Mayflower Compact before disembarking. This document, a forerunner of the Declaration of Independence and the US Constitution, gave guidance and a unifying structure to the new community.

Hester and the other Cooke children, Jane, Jacob and Elizabeth, joined Francis and John three years later on the *Anne*, after the Pilgrim colony had become established. Later two more daughters were born, Hester and Mary, bringing the total to six children. Despite wide-spread pestilence and death in those first months of the new colony, the Cookes were one of only four families that escaped disease: "miraculous exceptions," they were termed by Nathan Philbrick in his 2006 book, Mayflower.

Francis was a freeman who served on several committees and held various offices in the Plymouth Colony. He was on committees to layout both land grants and highways; he served several terms on the Plymouth petit jury, the grand jury and the coroner's jury; acted as surveyor of highway, and was arbitrator in a land dispute in 1659. Aside from these duties, nothing seems to be known of his work other than managing his properties. We do know that he had an apprentice for the seven years following 1636, and that in 1643 he was included on the list of those approved to bear arms.

Some years prior to Francis's death, William Bradford wrote of him, "Francis Cooke is still living, a very old man, and hath seen his children's children have children. After his wife came over with other of his children, he hath three still living by her, all married and have five children....And his son John, which came over with him, is married and hath four children living." Considering that Francis did not die until 1663, twelve years after this was written, he must have been thought a very old man by the time of his death; 80 years was certainly a ripe old age for those in the mid-17th century who had undergone the hardships of establishing a colony in the New World. He left a detailed inventory of his possessions. Plymouth County Commissioners have on record a document signed by John Cooke clarifying his father's will and the "deviding of his land in Rockey nooke...after our mother's death," naming Francis and Hester's four remaining children --John, Jacob, Hester and Mary --as beneficiaries once Hester should die.

Reference:

Mayflower Families Through Five Generations: Vol. 12, Francis Cooke by Ralph V. Wood Jr. Picton Press, Maine

Anderson, Robert C. *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England* Vol I. Boston: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 1995-.

Roser, Susan E. *Mayflower Births and Deaths*. From the files of George Ernest Bowman, at the Massachusetts Society of Mayflower Descendants. Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., 1992.

Stratton, Eugene A. *Plymouth Colony, Its History and People, 1620-1691*. Salt Lake City: Ancestry Publishing, 1986.

Wood, Ralph V. and Robert S. Wakefield. *Francis Cooke of the Mayflower: the First Five Generations*. Camden, ME: Picton Press, 1996.

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

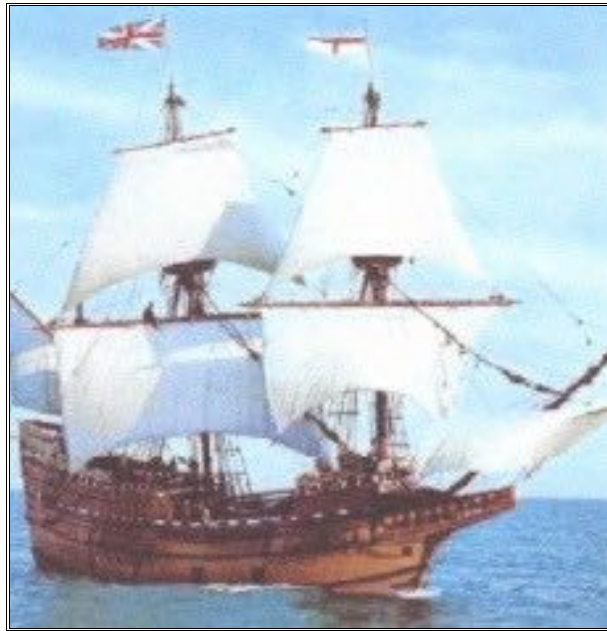
THOMAS CUSHMAN

MA

Ancestor of Louise Reynolds Haugh and Ann M. Patterson

Our ancestor, Thomas Cuslunan, was the Ruling Elder of Plymouth Colony for 43 years, 1649-1691. The Cushmans are descendants of Robert Cuslunan, who was instrumental in bring pilgrims to America "Robert was one of the most active promoters of the migration from Holland in 1620 of the Pilgrims in the *Mayflower*." He first sailed on the *Speedwell*, the ship that accompanied the *Mayflower*. However, it proved to be unseaworthy, and had to turn back.

Thomas Cuslunan was born in 1607/8 in Canterbury, England. He was only fourteen when he came to America in 1621 with his father Robert, aboard the first ship that sailed after the *Mayflower*, the ship *Fortune*. Those on board were the religious leaders, or "saints," and a group of "strangers", artisans and craftsmen sent by the sponsors to help make the colony viable enough to send fur and timber back to England. The ship arrived at Plymouth in November 1621, just after the first Thanksgiving. As the first colonists were not expecting a ship until spring, they were alarmed as they saw a ship approach, and were much relieved when she hoisted the English flag. The Plymouth colonists were able to load the *Fortune* with beaver and otter pelts and as much timber as they could stuff in the hold, and within a month of arriving, the *Fortune* departed.



the ship Fortune

<http://vandegriftsearch.com/cms/content/ship-fortune>

Robert Cuslunan left his son in the family of his "particular" friend, Governor William Bradford. Robert's intention was to return, after raising more funds for the benefit of the colony. Unfortunately, the *Fortune* was beset by French pirates en route home and was stripped of her precious cargo. Robert Cuslunan died in England, never to return to Plymouth. So, Thomas was adopted by Governor Bradford, trained by Elder Brewster, and grew up to be the colony's Ruling Elder until his death in 1691. He married Mary Allerton, daughter of Isaac Allerton, who were both *Mayflower* passengers.

References:

Genealogy of the Cushmans, Descendants of Robert Cushman, the Puritan, from 1617 to 1855.
Boston: Little Brown & Company.

Savage, James. Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England. Vol. I.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

AMMI RUHAMAH CUTTER

MA

Ancestor of Edith Martin Cox

Ammi Ruhamah Cutter was born in Maine on 6 May 1705. His parents were William and Rebecca Cutter and his father owned several mills and was a successful land speculator. He had nine brothers and sisters. A large family, I would say, though I have no way of knowing how many survived.

Ammi attended Harvard and in 1734 married Dorothy Bradbury. They had one son, who also went to Harvard and became a doctor. Ammi chose to become a minister and was the first one to serve at the First Parish Church in North Yarmouth, Massachusetts. He was dismissed, however, because of his liberal views. At Harvard, he had studied some medicine so he stayed in the town as a physician for seven years.

He must have had varied talents, as he commanded a fort in Saco, Massachusetts in 1742. He then commanded a company that captured the fortress at Louisburg, Nova Scotia, and was appointed to remain there as chief surgeon. I would like to picture him as being killed as a hero in battle, but, unfortunately, he succumbed to dysentery on 28 December 1745. He is buried in "Old Ledge" cemetery in North Yarmouth.

It is interesting to me that he was a doctor, as were his son and grandson. They were also named after him, but except for my grandmother's brother, no future generations have opted to name their sons, Ammi Ruhamah, nor has there been another doctor.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

NICHOLAS DANFORTH

MA

Ancestor of Martha McCarter

Nicholas Danforth was the son of Thomas Danforth (died 20 April 1620), grandson of Nicholas Danforth (died 12 November 1585), and the fifth generation from William Danforth, all of whom were born, died, and were buried in Framlingham, Suffolk, England. He also was born in Framlingham in 1589, was baptized there on 1 March 1589, and died in Cambridge, Massachusetts in April 1638. He married Elizabeth (Symmes?) who died 22 February 1628, and was buried in Framlingham.

Cotton Mather in his *Memorabilia*, II 59, describes him as "a gentleman of such estate and repute in the world that it cost him a considerable sum to escape the knight-hood which King Charles I imposed on all for so much per annum; and of such a figure and esteem in the church that he procured that famous lecture at Framlingham, where he had a fine manour; which lecture was kept by Mr. Burroughs and other noted ministers in their turn; to whom especially he proved a Gaius, and especially when the Laudian fury scotched them."

In Framlingham the parish register and records indicate that Nicholas was one of its leading citizens and that he became a churchwarden in 1622. This is a most important position as these wardens made the assessments on all properties of the townspeople, collected the taxes, and performed many other secular duties not carried out by local governmental bodies. He also was a member of the "Court Baron of Burrough Leet Jury," according to the records for the year 1629.

In 1634, when 45 years of age, Nicholas Danforth left Framlingham, England, and arrived at Boston, Massachusetts on the good ship Griffin, accompanied by his three sons, Thomas, Samuel and Jonathan and his three daughters, Anna, Lydia and Elizabeth, all of whom had been born and baptized in Framlingham. His reasons for leaving England are not known but it is surmised that he was influenced by the death of his wife five years before; the desire to escape the knighthood offered by King Charles I; and because he was a Puritan, the heat was on him and those other non-conformists who could not stomach the manner in which the church was being administered by the powerful bishops, supported by the Popish kings.

Nicholas Danforth left Boston soon after his arrival and took up residence at Cambridge, Massachusetts, where at once he became prominent in the affairs of the community. He is mentioned in the town records of 1635 as a proprietor and freeman (meaning eligible for Colonial office and to vote on matters of general government). The same and the following year he purchased several parcels of land. He made his house on what is now Bow Street, near Mount Auburn Street.

"He was chosen a deputy or representative of the General Court in 1635." On 3 March 1635/6, he was with others deputed to set out the bounds of the "newe plantacon above Charles Ryver" (Concord). The Committee made its report 13 April 1636. In September following he was appointed to a similar duty, "to measure and sett the boundaries of Roxbury and to sett those between Dedham and Dorchester." When the important committee was chosen to take order for a college at Newtown, 20 November 1637, Mr. Danforth was one of those selected. Another land boundary was submitted to him with associates 1637/8. He was also one of eleven men (one to a town) whom the court, by its vote of 12 March 1637/8, allowed to sell wine and strong water. "No one else to sell by retail without license from the council, so great was pressure to provide places where these articles could be bought and so many the abuses of the retail traffic, that they sought to place the traffic in the hands of their first citizens."

The Society of Colonial Wars in its publication (New York 1898) lists Nicholas Danforth (1585-1638) as a captain in the Pequot War of 1637.

The disposition of Nicholas Danforth's property is not clearly revealed by the records, but minutes of the proprietors and the recorded wills of his sons indicate that his children were the principal heirs.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

THOMAS DUDLEY

MA

Ancestor of Cynthia Goodger

Dudley, Thomas bapt. 12 Oct 1576 - buried 31 July 1653 Roxbury, MA

1. Dorothy (Yorke)

Governor, 1634, 1640, 1645, 1650

MA Civil List, 16.

Ancestor Register (ROA)

NSCDA

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

EDWARD FULLER

MA

Ancestor of Rosemary Scalpone; Submitted by Anne Marshall

4 September 1575 Redenhall Norfolk England
January 1620/21 Plymouth Colony.

Edward Fuller and his brother Samuel were both passengers on the *Mayflower* and signers of the Mayflower Pact 21 November 1620/21. They were born in Redenhall, a small village in the Eastern County of Norfolk England where their father Robert was a Butcher.

In 1618 Edward Fuller left England for Leiden Holland with his wife, probably Ann Suzanna Hall, and their son Samuel. They joined other English Puritan's including Edward's brother Samuel who had been in Leiden since 1609. No surviving records attest to their activities in Holland before they left on the ship *Speedwell* in August 1620 to rendezvous with the Mayflower awaiting them in Southampton on the English Channel.

There were lots of troubles with the *Speedwell*. August 5 1620 all transferred to the *Mayflower* for a trip that took three months. There were approximately 102 passengers. Some were paying customers, some indentured servants and some crew. On 21 November both Edward and Samuel signed the Mayflower Compact. By 11 January 1621 Edward and his wife were dead as were half of the Mayflower passengers. Most had stayed aboard the Mayflower and died of scurvy, pneumonia and tuberculosis during that first very hard winter. His uncle Samuel who survived until 1633 took in the orphaned Samuel.

The *Mayflower* and what was left of its crew returned to England in April 1621 completing the journey in half the time of its Westward voyage.

Edward Fuller had left several children behind in Norfolk County England. Son Matthew Fuller, a physician, arrived in the Plymouth Colony sometime before April 1642 when he purchased land there. He also served as the "Surgeon to the Forces of Plymouth" in 1673. He was one of the founders of Barnstable and died there in 1687.

References:

Eugene Aubrey Stratton, Plymouth Colony: Its History and People. 1620-1691 SLC:
Ancestry Publishing, 1986. P. 413
Mayflower Families through Five Generations, Volume 4, Edward Fuller L.M. Kellogg and other editors:
1990.
Caleb Johnson, The Mayflower and her Passengers (Indiana: Xlibris corp. 2006
Pp. 144,147.

Fuller, Hubert; and Florence Fuller. *The Fuller Family in England and America*. 2nd edition. Freeman,
SD: Pine Hill Press, 1971.
Fuller, William H. *Fuller Family*. Palmer, MA: The Compiler, 1908-1919.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

MATTHEW FULLER
MA
Ancestor of Minerva Kunzel

Matthew Fuller was born about 1603 in Redenhall, Norfolk, England. His parents were Edward and Anne Fuller; both died in 1621. Matthew moved during the 1640s to Barnstable, Massachusetts. He had married about 1625 a woman named Frances. They had five children.

He was appointed Surgeon for the Colonial Force in 1673. Matthew Fuller served as captain of Plymouth Colony forces during King Philip's War, 1675-76. He was one of the first physicians to settle at Barnstable. He took a public stand on the side of the Quakers and received a fine for it.

Matthew Fuller died on 22 August 1678 in Barnstable, Massachusetts. The preamble to his will testifies to his deep religious feeling, as do other clauses within it, beyond the conventional religious expressions of most Colonial wills in the seventeenth century.

" The five and twentieth Day of July in the yeer of our Lord one thousand six hundred seaventy and eight; Mathew Fuller of the Towne of Barnstable in the Collonie of New Plymouth; being sicke of body but of Good and perfect memory thanks be unto almighty God; and Calling to Remembrance the uncertaine state of this transitory life and that all flesh must yeild unto Death when it shall please God to Call; Doe make Constitute and ordaine; and Declare this my last will and Testament... first being penitent and sorry from the bottom of my hart for my sins past most humbly Desireing forgiveness for the same; give and Committ my soule unto almighty God my Saviour and Redeemer, in whom and by the Merretts of Jesus Christ, trust and believe assuredly to be saved, and my body to be buried in such place, as my executors heerafter Named shall appoint... "

Reference:

MacGunnigle, Bruce Campbell. Mayflower Families Through Five Generations: Descendants of the Pilgrims Who Landed at Plymouth Massachusetts, December 1620. Vol. 4, 2nd edition, "Family of Edward Fuller." Plymouth, MA: General Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1990.

David L. Greene, ed. Edward Fuller of the Mayflower and his descendants for four generations. Plymouth: General Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1987.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

DR SAMUEL FULLER
MA
Ancestor of Theodosia Suman Kempf

Samuel Fuller was born in England, Harleston County, Redenhall Parish, Norfolk and baptized there on 20 January 1580. He died in 1633 at Plymouth in New England. My family (from my maternal side) is descended from Samuel's 3rd wife, Bridget Lee, and more specifically, their second child, Samuel II who, like his father, was a physician as well as the minister of the Church in Middleboro, Massachusetts.

Fuller was married three times: first, to Alice Glasscock on 24 April 1613 (deceased, date unrecorded); then, to Agnes Carpenter (deceased 1615) on 27 May 1613; and finally, to Bridget Lee on 27 May 1617 in Leyden, Holland. Bridget, his final wife, was not on the Mayflower with him but followed in 1623 on the "Ann". The first two marriages were childless, but Samuel and Bridget had three children: Bridget, Samuel and Mercy.

Records indicate that Fuller joined a group of "Separatists" (a group who wanted to reform the Church of England) in Scrooby, England. The Separatists joined with a band of Pilgrims who immigrated to Holland and settled in Leyden in 1609. It was there that he united with his 3rd wife Bridget. Of note, the Separatists should not be mistaken for Puritans who followed them later and settled in Salem Massachusetts. He, along with this Dutch band of Pilgrims or "Saints", as they were called, came to the New World on the Mayflower in 1620.

In the Mayflower ship records, "Saints" were distinguished from "Strangers" who were other passengers not belonging to their religious group. Samuel was listed as a "Saint", as well as "physician and surgeon". Dr. Fuller was also a Deacon of the church for which the office, at that time, was more prestigious than "physician and surgeon".

It is believed that, while in Holland, Samuel attended the Medical University. He has been called, by some historians, "the first regularly educated physician in America." True to his profession, once in the New World, Dr. Fuller was greatly interested in learning Indian lore of herbs and medicinal plants. A learned man, he, along with William Bradford (later governor) were the only two on board the Mayflower to have libraries of any note. The two were great friends and enjoyed sharing their knowledge and discoveries in the New World. Samuel was the only Pilgrim listed who brought a servant, William Butten (probably indentured), to learn the medical profession. Unfortunately, Butten died on the voyage over. While these findings are a testimony to his intellect, Fuller was also known as a compassionate man. Faithful to the art of healing, we have an endearing letter of gratitude from settlers of Salem who sent for him during a "plague attack".

Another particularly notable fact is that Dr. Fuller was the eighth signer of the Mayflower Compact. The Compact is regarded as the first democratic covenant to have been drafted and put into practice.

A final official document cites the death of Samuel I at Plymouth in 1663. He left a Will, interesting in its contents, in which he bequeathed friends colorful clothing and "items of luxury": proof that Pilgrims were truly "Elizabethans" and NOT Puritans.

To conclude, in the family annals, there are numerous letters of gratitude and praise for Deacon/Doctor Samuel Fuller's devotion and ministrations to his fellow pilgrims. In my personal research to learn more about Dr. Fuller, I am particularly fond of this tribute I found in the New England Journal of Medicine written by John J. Byrne, MD (20 Nov 1958). This embodies the character of Samuel Fuller, a man, I believe to be of selfless character: "Thus, as, a deacon of the church was recognized as a physician of his people and also proved to be one of the first ambassadors of good will, doing much to ensure the future growth of the Plymouth Plantation".

Bibliography:
History of Plymouth Plantation , William Bradford (circa 1620)

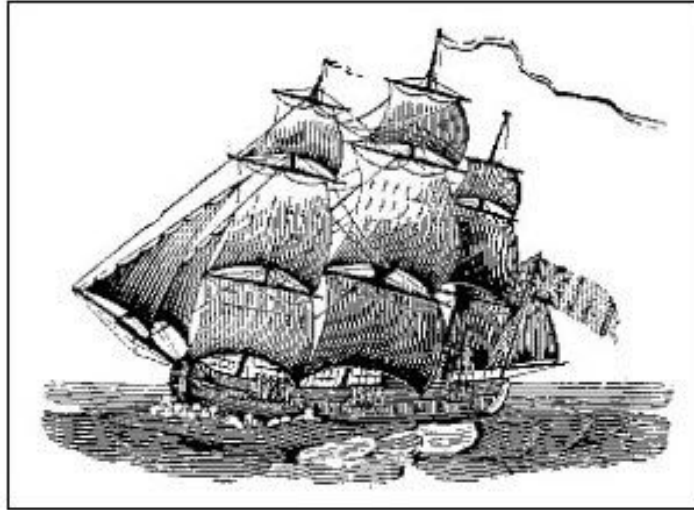
Saints and Strangers ,George F. Willison, Copyright,1945
The Society of Mayflower Descendants in the District of Columbia, edited by Frederick Ordway Jr. Library
of Congress no79-846 41
The Truth About the Pilgrims , Francis R. Stoddard, copyright, 1952
Families of the Pilgrims. Samuel Fuller. Compiled by Hubert Kinney Shaw, published by the
Massachusetts Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1945
Mayflower , Nathaniel Philbrook, copyright 2006

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

EDMUND GOODENOW
MA
Ancestor of Kathryn King Dabbs

Edmund Goodenow was born about 1611 in Dunhead, St. Andrew, Wiltshire, England. He was the son of Thomas A. Goodenow. He married Anne/Anna Barry, daughter of John Barry. Edmund and his family came to America on the ship *Confidence*." The ship left the port of Southampton, England and arrived in Boston, Massachusetts on 24 April 1638.



The ship *Confidence*

<https://familyhistory.wordpress.com/2010/12/17/hugh-march-1620-1699/>

Edmund apparently left England for religious reasons as he had been fined there for non-conformity. No doubt, the voyage was a long and taxing one for a man, his wife, and two small children under the age of four years. Edmund Goodenow brought a servant, Richard Sanger, with him on the journey. Several other Goodenow family members came to America at the same time and the family helped found several New England villages.

The Edmund Goodenow family joined several others in settling the nineteenth village in Massachusetts that is known by the name Sudbury. To this day, the name is well known there and the Goodenow Library stands as a lasting tribute to one of the founding fathers of Sudbury. The Goodnow Mountain and Goodnow River in the Adirondacks, Goodnow, Illinois, and Goodnow Hills in Washington state also stand as a testimony to the family's migration westward. A Goodenow founded Kansas State University in Manhattan, Kansas. Some descendants of Edmund Goodenow were prominent, but most were common, ordinary people who did some extraordinary things.

Edmund Goodenow's name is on the Proprietor's list of Sudbury, Massachusetts of 1639. Edmund was appointed by the General Court to help lay out the village of Sudbury. He took the Freeman's Oath on 13 May 1640. He is mentioned in Johnson's "Wonder Working Providence" as a leader of the militia. He was active in the affairs of the village and was named a Captain of a Foot Company for Sudbury on 27 May 1674 during King Phillip's War. Edmund was named as a "Deputy" to the General Court from Sudbury for 1645, 1649, 1650, 1660, 1673, 1674, 1679, and 1680.

The children of Edmund and Anne were: John, Thomas, Hannah, Sarah, Joseph, Edmund, Elizabeth, and Mary. These children grew to have families of their own and their many descendants are scattered across the United States.

Edmund Goodenow's death occurred on 3 Apr 1688 in Wayland, Middlesex County,

Massachusetts. His wife, Anne/Anna Barry died 9 March 1674/75 in Wayland, Middlesex County, Massachusetts. Both are buried in the Wayland Cemetery (formerly known as the East Sudbury, Old North Cemetery, or Old Burial Ground) in Wayland, Middlesex County, Massachusetts.

Sources:

Goodenow, Goodenough, Goodnough Genealogy by Prescott A. & Nellie (Marked Goodnough, Published 1954.

Goodenows Who Originated in Sudbury, Massachusetts by Theodore James Fleming Banvard, Published 1917. (Digitized version available at www.familysearch.org).

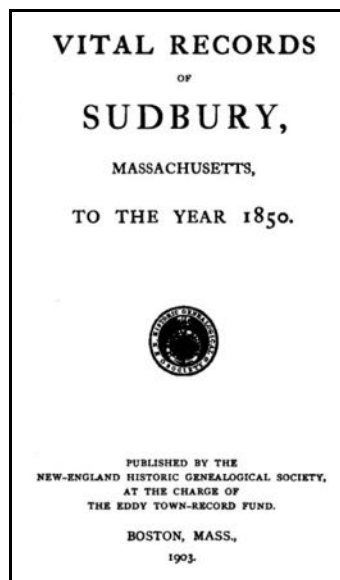
Savage's Genealogical Dictionary, Vol. II, pg.271 by James Savage.

Year Book of the Massachusetts Society of Colonial Dames

Records of the Governor & Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, Vol. 5, by Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, 1854.



Graves of Edmund and Anne
Old Burial Ground Wayland, MA –



Vital Records of Sudbury MA
ma-vitalrecords.org

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

JOSEPH HAMMOND

MA

Ancestor of Constance Hammond Branscomb

Major Joseph Hammond was born in the year 1647 in Massachusetts in the town of Wells, now one of the southernmost coastal towns of Maine. His father, William Hammond, one of the founders of Wells, had arrived in the Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1630, and moved north to seek his fortune.

In 1669 Joseph moved to the nearby town of Kittery and in the following year married Katherine Frost Leighton, widow of William Leighton.

In Kittery and beyond, Joseph became a very prominent man of his time. He served for many years as the Town Clerk, a Councilor, Selectman, Deputy of the General Court, Recorder of Deeds, and Judge of the Court of Common Pleas. He was a major of the militia for several years, and for nine years was a member of the Executive Council of the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

Hammond built a large garrison in the early 1680s on a part of his land near the Piscataqua River. The fort, which the Indians unsuccessfully tried to capture, lasted for 150 years. They did, however, capture Hammond on 6 July 1695, (while he was searching in the woods for a lost cow) and marched him off to Canada. A single story has passed by family legend about this trek:

"One evening, after a hard day's march, as he and his savage captors were sitting around the campfire enjoying their dinner of venison or bear steak, Hammond remarked to the old Indian Chief in charge of the party, "Now, if we only had a little salt, this would taste good." To which the Indian responded, "Him [the meat] so salt[y] now, me scarcely [can] eat him [it]."

Once in Canada, Joseph was treated with great consideration by the French Commandant. In October he was ransomed and returned home.

Survived by his wife Katherine, Joseph Hammond died at the age of 63 on 22 February 1710. He was the father of four children, two boys and two girls. The elder of the two sons died at age 18, leaving the younger son, also named Joseph, to carry on this Hammond line.

Reference:

Hammond, Charles Adrian. To All Ye Hammond Tribe, 1913.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

JOHN HATHAWAY

MA

Ancestor of Karen M. Ladner and Patricia F. Ladner

Our ancestor is John Hathaway. There seems to be some disagreement as to where he was born. The research performed by the Colonial Dames' genealogist indicates that he was probably born in Wollaston, Massachusetts in 1629. However, the Internet sources believe that he was born in Kingscote, Gloucester, England, which is where his father Nicholas lived. Some sources state that the Hathaways appear in the records of Massachusetts in 1623. They all agree that John was born circa 1629 and died in 1705. His place of death was Taunton, Massachusetts. He was married twice, first to Martha and then to Ruth.

John married Martha in about 1649. They had six children, all of whom lived well into adulthood. After Martha died he married the widow of Christopher Dyer, Ruth. This marriage took place on Christmas day in 1692 at the First Church in Braintree. Ruth died in 1705, most likely just after John's death.

During his relatively long life John played a role in the political and legal community in the area of Massachusetts in which he lived. From 1658 until his death he resided in an area called "The Farms" which was then a part of Taunton and is now part of Berkley. His home abutted what was called "The Great River." An iron tablet was erected in 1889 by the Old Colony Historical Society to memorialize this. The plaque remains visible to this day.

John was elected Constable in 1676. As constable he represented the civil government. In 1680 he was elected a Deputy to the Plymouth General Court in which capacity he served for five years. In 1681 he was chosen as one of the selectmen to order town affairs. He served as selectman for four years. In the 1690s he served as Deputy to the General Court of Massachusetts and again as Constable.

In addition to these positions, John served frequently as a juror and was an attorney of record. He was the co-founder of the Chartley Iron Works in the neighboring town of Norton. He served as an Ensign. In 1687 he gave 10 acres of land in partial payment for the support of the Reverend Samuel Dansforth.

References:

Shurtleff: Nathaniel B. *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth in New England* Boston: The Commonwealth, 1855-1856.

Versailles, Elizabeth Starr. *Hathaways of America*. Northampton(?), MA: Sponsored by Hathaway Family Association, 1965.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

FRANCIS HIGGINSON

MA

Ancestor of Barbara Higginson Evans

Francis Higginson was born in Leicestershire, England in 1586. He graduated with a M.A. from Cambridge in 1613 and was admitted in 1614 to the ministry of the Church of England. He later became a nonconformist. He served as an American colonial clergyman.

On 29 June 1629, Samuel Skelton and Francis Higginson arrived in Massachusetts on the ship *Talbot*, the first Presbyterian pastors in the American Colonies. His journal of the first months at Salem was sent back to England and printed with the title, *New-England's Plantation* (1630).

He was elected minister of the settlement; he drew up a confession of faith and a covenant that were adopted. He died in 1630, as a result of the hardships suffered that first winter.

His wife was Anne Herbert, who was born about 1592 and died 25 February 1639/40.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

JOHN HOWLAND
MA
Ancestor of Nancy Payne

John Howland was born in 1592, the son of Henry Howland of Fen Stanton, Huntingdonshire (which is near Newport, Essex County, England). He was the thirteenth signer of the Mayflower Pact. While crossing the ocean on the *Mayflower*, during a violent storm, John Howland was swept overboard and almost drowned. Grasping a rope trailing astern, he was then rescued by means of a boathook.

John Howland was apprenticed to Governor Carver's family. Since the Governor and his wife were among the fifty Pilgrims who died during the first year at Plymouth, it is believed that John Howland inherited John Carver's estate, as the Carvers had no children of their own.

The Pilgrim John Howland died at Plymouth 23 February 1672/3 at "over eighty" years of age. His wife died 21 December 1687 at Swansea. They had ten children, four boys and six girls. My ancestor is Desire Howland, his eldest daughter.

His home and grave can be seen in Plymouth. Carved on his tombstone are these words from the records of the Plymouth Colony: "He was an ancient professor of the ways of Christ; one of the first comers, and proved an instrument of good, and was the last of the male survivors of those who came over in the *Mayflower* in 1620, and whose place of abode was Plymouth."

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

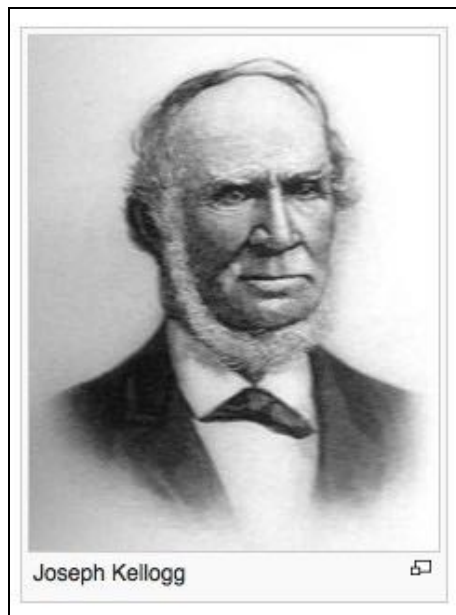
[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

JOSEPH KELLOGG
MA
Ancestor of Linda Strauss

Birth: 1626, Harwich, England

Death: 27 June 1708, Hadley, Hampshire County, Massachusetts

The son of Martin & Prudence (Bird) Kellogg, he was baptized on April 1, 1626 in Great Leighs, England. He married (1) Joanna Foote, daughter of Richard Foote, probably in England. The date of their immigration is unknown. He married (2) Abigail Terry, daughter of Stephen & Elizabeth Terry of Windsor, Conn., on 9 May 1667.



http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Joseph_Kellogg

He was in Farmington in the Colony of Conn. in 1651. He and wife, Joanna, joined the Farmington church on October 9, 1653. His home lot was four acres that he purchased from John Andrews as well as a twelve acre lot for plowing called "Nod Hill". He served several terms as a selectman. His occupation was that of a weaver.

He sold his property in Farmington and removed to Boston about 1657 where he purchased a dwelling house for 140 pounds from Peter Oliver & his wife on October 16, 1659. This property was mortgaged in November of that year to Sgt. Thomas Clarke to secure the payment of 100 pounds for wheat, pork, & peas at current market price. The land was sold to John Witherden on June 13, 1661.

In 1661, he removed from Boston to Hadley in Mass, Bay Colony being an early proprietor of Hadley. He made an agreement with the town to keep the ferry between Hadley and Northampton. The ferry lot is where he built his home lot. On June 1, 1677, the town ordered that "Joseph Kellogg, ferryman of Hadley, be paid 40 pounds for loss of his team impressed for the country's service and with refernce to his ferriage of souldjers." He, his son John, and grandson, James Kellogg, kept this ferry until 1758, almost a century.

Joseph Kellogg was chosen Sgt. of the train band of Hadley in 1663. On May 9, 1678, he was promoted to Ensign of the Foot Company in Hadley and in October of the same year, Lieutenant of that company, a position in which he served for 29 consecutive years. Sgt. Kellogg & his troops fought in the "Turner's Falls" battle in 1676. He was a selectman in Hadley for several years between 1665 and 1692, and was

on a committee to purchase land from the Indians called Swampfield.

In 1661 his estate was valued at 100 pounds, but by the time of his death in 1708, it was worth about 400 pounds even though he had gifted part of his estate previously to his children. He fathered 20 children, 14 of which reached adulthood. His will probated and proved on February 10, 1708, shows his deep faith in his Lord & Savior, Jesus Christ. In it he names children: John Kellogg, Martin Kellogg, Edward Kellogg, Samuel Kellogg, Joanna (Kellogg) Smith; Sarah (Kellogg) Ashley, Stephen Kellogg & Nathaniel Kellogg, Elizabeth (Kellogg) Nash, Abigail (Kellogg) Smith, Prudence (Kellogg) Merrill, Ebenezer Kellogg, Jonathan Kellogg, Joseph Kellogg. His widow, Abigail and friend, Capt. Samuel Partridge were appointed joint executors. He was buried in Old Hadley Cemetery, Hadley, Hampshire County, Massachusetts.

Family links:

Spouses:

Joanna *Foote* Kellogg (1628 - 1666)*

Abigail Martha *Terry* Kellogg (1646 - 1726)*

Children:

John Kellogg (1656 - 1723)*

Martin Kellogg (1658 - 1732)*

Edward Kellogg (1660 - ____)*

Samuel Kellogg (1662 - 1717)*

Joanna *Kellogg* Smith (1664 - 1727)*

Sarah *Kellogg* Ashley (1666 - 1729)*

Steven Kellogg (1668 - 1722)*

Abigail *Kellogg* Smith (1671 - 1742)*

Elizabeth *Kellogg* Nash (1673 - 1750)*

Editha *Kellogg* Moodey (1679 - 1757)*

Jonathan Kellogg (1679 - 1771)*

Joseph Kellogg (1684 - 1724)*

- <http://www.findagrave.com/cgi-bin/fg.cgi?page=gr&GRid=37793689>

-

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

HENRY KINGMAN
MA
Ancestor of Linda Lee Dowdy

Born in England 1594
Died June 5, 1667
Weymouth, Massachusetts

When Henry Kingman was age 40, he sailed from Weymouth in Dorchester around March 20, 1635 in Rev Joseph Hulls company and arrived at Dorchester June 7, 1635. Accompanying him was his wife Joan, age 39, along with sons Edward Kingman age 16, Thomas age 7, John age 2, and daughters Joane age 11, and Anne age 9. Also accompanying was his servant John Ford, age 30. He was made a freeman of the Mass Bay Colony March 3, 1635. Seven lots were granted to him at Weymouth, twelve acres in the Westernneck, first given to John Whitmarsh, three acres first given to George Allen, three in the Esterneck, first given to Sammuel Butterworth. He was licensed to keep the ferry at Weymouth during the pleasure of the general court March 3, 1635-36, and would receive twopence apiece for transportation of people, March 12, 1637-38. He was also licensed to keep a house of entertainment at Weymouth June 6, 1637. He was a deputy from Weymouth to the general court May 2, 1638, May 27, 1652 and May 26, 1657 and was also one of a committee to lay out a highway from Weymouth to Dorchester December 25, 1648. He purchased his dwelling and 20 acres in Weymouth from William Richards for 59 pounds May 12, 1648. Henry Kingman was chosen a townsman of Weymouth November 26, 1651.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

ELEAZER LAWRENCE
MA
Ancestor of Charlotte Taylor Rowe

Eleazer Lawrence was born at Groton, Massachusetts on 28 February 1674. He grew up in a moderately prosperous family with ample land, inherited and purchased by his father, Peleg Lawrence. He married Mary Scripture of Groton about 1697.

Eleazer was a grandson of John Lawrence who was born in 1609 in County Suffolk, England. John Lawrence settled in Massachusetts about 1634. He was a carpenter and had fifteen children.

Eleazer and Mary had ten children, most of the births having been recorded at Groton. They resided in the "Nashoba Territory" purchased by his father, and adjoining Groton and Littleton. Eleazer served his community as Captain of the Littleton Company in 1717, and was later promoted to Major. This service gained him a listing in the Register of Ancestors of the National Society of the Colonial Dames of America, and its entry was used to establish my eligibility for membership in NSCDA in California, San Diego Committee.

Mary Scripture was only seventeen at the time of her marriage to Eleazer Lawrence. They spent their lives in the areas of Groton and Littleton.

Eleazer's grandson, Eleazer Fletcher, who lived in Littleton, was commissioned a Captain of the local militia on 12 November 1772, and fought in the Battle of Bunker Hill on 17 June 1775. My grandfather, Edward Fletcher, a great-great grandson of Eleazer Fletcher, was concerned that Littleton had no monuments to its Revolutionary War heroes, and caused to be erected two memorials in Liberty Park, site of the militia training grounds. One of these is a monument to Captain Eleazer Fletcher and the other is a large memorial to all the local men, listing each name, who served. These memorials were completed and dedicated in 1950-1951.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

WILLIAM LEWIS

MA

Ancestor of Virginia Knowles O'Grady Hammond

William Lewis of "St. Chad's" English origin, sailed from London on 22 June 1632 on the ship arriving at Boston on September 16th -- a twelve week crossing. The 123 passengers included the "Braintree Company," members of the Reverend Thomas Hooker's congregation from Chalmersford and Braintree.

William Lewis married Felix, whose surname is unknown. William was a freeman and a churchman. His first residence was Cambridge where he bought property. Later he and his wife resided in Hartford and Hadley.

They moved to Hartford in 1636, where he became a founder. In 1659, he moved to and became a founder of Hadley. His wife died there on 17 April 1671. In 1675, he moved to Farmington and became a founder there.

William died in Farmington on 2 August 1683. In his will dated 1683, he left properties to his son William Lewis, Jr., who served as a militia officer in King Philip's war.

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

BENJAMIN LYNDE

MA

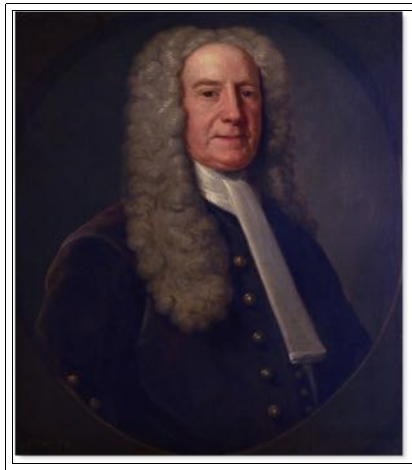
Ancestor of Emily Wilson

The Honorable Benjamin Lynde, born in 1666, was the son of Simon Lynde, who came to New England in 1650. Lynde received his first degree from Harvard. He then completed his professional duties in England for the study of law. He returned from England and married Mary, daughter of the Honorable William Browne, of Salem. In 1728 he was made Chief Justice of the Province of Massachusetts.

The more than thirty years during which Judge Lynde sat upon the bench was an important era in the judicial history of the Province. Previous to that period there were few persons in the colony of any considerable legal attainment, and judicial appointments were made rather through social influence or political favor. Judge Lynde introduced a new order of things, bringing with him from the highest law school of the realm, a competent knowledge of law.

At the time of his death in 1745, the following notice was published in the Boston Evening-Post - "Inflexible justice, unspotted integrity, affability, and humanity were ever conspicuous in him. He was a sincere friend, most affectionate to his relations, and the delight of all that were honored with his friendship and acquaintance."

An original portrait of Chief Justice Lynde, painted by John Smybert in 1737, hangs in the Huntington Library in San Marino, California.



Chief Justice Lynde by John Smybert

Huntington Library, San Marino CA

Benjamin Lynde, Jr. was the trial judge for the Boston Massacre, Captain Preston in particular. There is a Lynde Street in the center of Salem.

His third great granddaughter was a founding member of the National Society of Colonial Dames of America.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

FRANCIS PEABODY
MA
Ancestor of Jean Wirick

Birth: 1614, Herfordshire, England

Death: Feb 1697, Topsfield, Essex County, Massachusetts

Lieutenant Francis Peabody of St. Albans, Hertfordshire, England came to New England in the ship "Planter" in 1635.



Passenger Ship Planter, 1635

<http://www.geni.com/projects/Great-Migration-Passengers-of-the-Planter-1635/805>

He was about 21 years of age. He is stated to have first settled in Ipswich MA, which then included, indefinitely, the territory outside of the present limits of that town.

A black and white image of a handwritten signature in cursive script, which reads "Francis Peabody". The signature is written on a piece of paper with a dark diagonal strip in the top left corner.

Francis Peabody Signature

<http://scholtz.org>

He was one of the first settlers in Hampton, NH, going there with Rev. Stephen Batchelder (father of Deborah Wing who married John Wing of Sandwich and the ancestor of the Perkins family through Henrietta Child who married Ira Perkins, father of Edwin E. Perkins), in 1637. He was made a Freedman in 1640. His name is found in the Grand Jury, and on trial juries in Hampton. As that place prior to 1657 was decided to be within the limits of NH,

He sold his estate in Hampton in 1650 and bought land in what is now Topsfield MA, on the southern

border, where he spent the rest of his life. He was a large landholder and was prominent for his enterprise and wealth. He died on Feb. 19, 1697-8. He married Mary Foster and had 14 children. Mary Foster came from England (Wales?). She was descended from Alfred the Great from Scottish kings and was related to every king and queen at that time. No records of birth and death. {Signed his will "paybody"}

Family links:

Parents:

John Peabody (1590 - 1667)

Isabel *Harper* Peabody (1592 - ____)

Spouses:

Mary *Foster* Peabody (1618 - 1705)*

Lydia Peabody* (first wife)

Children:

Lydia *Peabody* Perley (1640 - 1715)*

John Pabody (1642 - 1720)*

Joseph Peabody (1644 - 1721)*

William Peabody (1646 - 1699)*

Isaac Peabody (1648 - 1726)*

Sarah *Peabody* Howe (1650 - 1732)*

Hepzibah *Peabody* Rea (1652 - 1727)*

Mary *Peabody* Death (1656 - ____)*

Ruth Peabody (1658 - ____)*

Damaris Peabody (1660 - 1660)*

Samuel Peabody (1661 - 1677)*

Jacob Peabody (1664 - 1689)*

Hannah *Peabody* Andrews (1668 - ____)*

Nathaniel Peabody (1669 - 1715)*

- <http://www.findagrave.com/cgi-bin/fg.cgi?page=gr&GRid=7547411>

-

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

EDMUND RICE

M A

Ancestor of Sue Elizabeth Busby

Edmund Rice was born in Buckinghamshire, England about 1594. He married Thomasine Frost on October 15, 1618 in St. Mary's Bury St. Edmunds, Suffolk, England. They came to America with their eight children: Henry, Edward, Thomas, Lydia, Matthew, Daniel, Samuel, and Joseph. Another child, Edmund, was born at sea, and Benjamin was born in America. They arrived in Boston in 1638. They settled in Sudbury, Massachusetts in 1639.

Edmund Rice was Deputy to the General Court in 1640, 1643, and 1652. He died May 3, 1663 in Marlborough, Massachusetts. He is buried in Sudbury, Massachusetts.

Sources:

Vital Records of Marlborough, Massachusetts to the end of the year 1849.

Vital Records of Sudbury, Massachusetts to the end of the year 1850.

English Notes on Edmund Rice, by Mary Lovering Holman.

The Wife of Edmund Rice, by Winifred Lovering Holman. Hudson, Charles. *History of the town of Marlborough, Middlesex County, Massachusetts, from its first settlement in 1657 to 1861; With a brief sketch of the town of Northborough, a genealogy of the families in Marlborough to 1800, and an account of the celebration of the two hundredth anniversary of the incorporation of the town.* Boston: Press of T. R. Marvin & Son, 1862.

Worcester, MA: Franklin. P. Rice, trustee of the fund, 1908. [Systematic history fund (publications).]

Ward, Andrew Henshaw. *A genealogical history of the Rice family.* Boston: C. B. Richardson, 1858. [n.p., Edmund Rice (1638) Association]

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

THOMAS ROGERS

MA

Ancestor of Linda Lang Balogh and Jeanne Rodger Gruenwald

Thomas Rogers, grandson of William and Joan Rogers, and son of William Rogers and his wife Eleanor, was born before 1572 in Watford, Northampton, England. On 24 October 1597, Thomas married Alice Gosford, the daughter of George Gosford. Their first two sons, Thomas and Richard, born in Watford between 1598/9 and 1591/1600, respectively, died in infancy and were buried in Watford. The next sons Joseph and John were born in Watford in 1602/3 and 1606, followed by two daughters, Elizabeth and Margaret, who were also born in Watford in 1608 and 1613.

Thomas and Alice went to Leiden, Holland, with the Pilgrims. On 25 June 1618, Thomas Rogers became a citizen of Leiden, Holland. That record states that he was merchant of camlet, a luxury Asian-type fabric made from a combination of silk and camels' hair. On 1 April 1620 he sold his house before sailing for America on the Mayflower with his eldest son Joseph. His wife Alice, their teenage son John, and the two little girls remained behind in Leiden where they still lived in 1622. Thomas Rogers was one of the 41 men aboard the MAYFLOWER. To establish legal order and to quell increasing strife within the ranks, the settlers wrote and signed the Mayflower Compact in November 1620. His was the eighteenth signatory, Joseph, 17, was too young to sign. The Mayflower was originally headed for their planned destination of the Colony of Virginia. On November, 9 - 19, 1620 after about 3 months at sea they spotted land, which was the Cape Cod Hook, now called Provincetown Harbor. After several days of trying to get south to Virginia, strong winter seas forced them to return to the harbor at Cape Cod Hook, MA well north of their intended destination. Unfortunately, when the rigorous New England winter ended, half of the 102 passengers were dead. Thomas was listed as dying "in the first sickness". He died on 11 January 1621. Thomas was laid to rest at the top of Coles Hill, where the settlers buried their dead in unmarked graves and made efforts to conceal all burials. This was done in an attempt to hide their weakness from Native Indians who might be watching them.

Joseph and John, Sons of Thomas Rogers

In the 1623 Plymouth Colony land division, Joseph was allowed two acres - one for himself and one on behalf of his late father Thomas. In the division of cattle he may have been living in the household of Governor Bradford with whom he was grouped on 22 May 1627. He married Hannah_____, and they had eight children. Joseph moved to East MA about 1647 where he was appointed "lieutenant to exercise the men at arms there." Rogers was appointed as a selectman for Eastham, with four others. the court gave Joseph liberty to purchase land from natives near Eastham, at a place called Naamcoyicke. Joseph's will was written 2 January 1677/8 and probated 5 March 1677/8. He died between 2 and 15 January 1677/8 in Eastham MA. He was buried in the Old Cove Burying Ground.

bought a lot at Duxbury from Edmund Chandler. He married Anna Churchman in Plymouth on 16 April 1639, they had four children. The proof of his identity lies in a grant made 6 April 1640 to "Joseph Rogers and John Rogers his brother.... fifty acres apeece of upland....at the North River." In Duxbury he was a surveyor of highways in 1644, deputy to the General Court in 1657 and on 6 June 1666 he was appointed constable of Duxbury. He died 26-30 August 1691 in Duxbury, Plymouth, MA. He was buried in the Myles Standish Burying Ground.

Citations

Stott, Clifford. "The English Ancestry of the Pilgrim Thomas Rogers and His Wife Alice (Cosford) Rogers." *The Genealogist*. 10:138-149.

Wakefield, Robert S. "Mayflower Passengers Turner and Rogers: Probable Identification of Additional Children." *The Genealogist*. 52:110-113.

Westgate, Revised by Reeves, *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations...*, Vol. 19, Family of Thomas Rogers (2000), p. 1, all data.

Westgate, Revised by Reeves, *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations...*, Vol. 19, Family Of Thomas Rogers (2000), pp. 6-9, all data, citations of references.

Sources *The Records of of the Colony of New Plymouth, in New England*, edited by Nathaniel B. Shurtleff and David Pulsifer (Boston: William White, 1855-61; New York: AMS Press, 1968). 12 v. in 6.

Thomas Rogers Society, Person Page-1, 1640 Land Grant, courtesy of John White. (reproduced 1707).

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

JONATHAN SANDERSON
MA
Ancestor of Alice Price Geddes*

*deceased

Jonathan Sanderson was born in Watertown, Massachusetts in 1646. He was a resident of Watertown and Cambridge where he met and married Abiah Bartlett in 1669. He served as a Lieutenant in the Militia from 1669 to 1670 according to the National Society of the Colonial Dames of America Register of Ancestors, Massachusetts List of Ancestors, (June 2000), page 98.

Jonathan and Abia Sanderson had five children: Samuel, born in 1708; Abraham, born in 1711; Jonathan, born in 1713; Mercy, born in 1718; and Moses, born in 1721.

According to *Hudson's History of Lexington, Vol. 11, Genealogies*, a Samuel Sanderson was born in Waltham, Massachusetts on September 8, 1748. He was the great grandson of Jonathan Sanderson. He married Mary Munroe in 1772. She was the daughter of one of the Munroe's who lived in that part of Lexington, Massachusetts known as Scotland. The following account is from "*Munroe Tavern, the Custodian's Story*", 1775:

"When Samuel heard that the British were coming, he piloted his wife, Mary, over to her father's house at Scotland. After the British retreated, Mary returned home and found a good many things had been stolen. Her cow (which was a good part of her marriage portion) had been killed and a wounded British soldier was stowed away in her bed. She cried out, "I won't have him there. Why didn't you knock him on the head?" But the town authorities insisted he be taken care of". Those who lived on that part of Lexington called Scotland had a little of the Scottish accent and Mary Sanderson kept it all her life. She lived to be 104 years old and as late as age 103 she would tell of this in her Scotch dialect to visitors who called on her home in East Lexington to hear about her story of April 19, known as "The Battle of April 19, 1775."

About this same time Samuel Sanderson found himself involved with one of the first Revolutionary conflicts in a detachment from "Lexington Militia Company" commanded by Captain John Bridge. They were part of a detachment to Cambridge on June 17th and 18th 1777 when, led by Captain Parker, they repaired promptly to the scene of action and offered themselves for active service during the Battle of Bunker Hill. The account of this action was given in a deposition by Samuel Sanderson and thirteen other Minute Men as well as American Rebel John Harris of the Boston Globe.

The Minutemen

<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Minutemen> dedicated themselves to the following Pledge: "We trust in God that should the state of our affairs require it, we shall be ready to sacrifice our estates and everything dear in life, yea, and life itself, in support of the common cause."



Minutemen

<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Minutemen>

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

WILLIAM SARGENT

MA

Ancestor of Elizabeth Hill Carson and Barbara Edward

The ancestor I used for Colonial Dames qualification was William Sargent, who was born in England in 1602 and migrated to Agawan, now Ipswich, Massachusetts. William received 12 acres when John Winthrop, Jr. began a plantation in Ipswich through a 1634 Land Grant. Recipients were protected by an Act recorded in the General Court records of the Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1633.

He took the Oath of Freeman (allegiance and fidelity) on 22 May 1639 which required church membership in a settlement in the Massachusetts Bay Colony. He became known as William of Ipswich, but moved on to be one of the first settlers of Wessacucon, now Newbury, Massachusetts in 1635.

With the Reverend Stephen Bachilor he was amongst the list of mostly Newbury men who on 6 September 1638 were granted "liberty to begin a plantation at Winnacunnet (Hampton) New Hampshire." But he loved the pioneer's life so much that after six years in Hampton, he helped to settle Salisbury NewTown, changed to Amesbury, Massachusetts, where he remained until his death in 1675. He received land there from 1654 to 1668, a "township" for one of his sons in 1660 and a Meeting House seat in 1667.

His wife was Elizabeth Perkins who arrived in Salisbury, Essex County, Massachusetts aboard the ship *Lion* with her parents in 1631 from Newent, Gloucestershire, England. They were married in Amesbury in 1633 and had eight children. She predeceased William who subsequently married Joanna Pindor Rowell, a widow, on 18 September 1670. They had no children.

William was considered one of the "Prudential" men in Amesbury and resided in the part of town known as the "West Parish," with a house near the church and academy. He was buried in the cemetery at the "Ferry" and his probated will showed an inventory amounting to 191 pounds.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

RICHARD WARREN
MA
Ancestor of Victoria Adams*

*deceased

Richard Warren (c. 1578–died c.1628) was one of the passengers on the Pilgrim ship [Mayflower](#) and a signer of the [Mayflower Compact](#).

Early life

Richard Warren married Elizabeth Walker, at [Great Amwell, Hertfordshire](#), on April 14, 1610. Elizabeth Walker was the daughter of Augustine Walker of Great Amwell. She was baptized at Baldock in September 1583. This information came to light with the discovery of Augustine Walker's will dated April 19, 1613, in which he named his daughter Elizabeth and her children Mary, Ann and Sarah Warren.

Based on his marriage in Hertfordshire, current speculation is that he also came from that county. His parentage and apparent birthplace in [Hertfordshire](#) are uncertain, but there is a Warren family that may be of that ancestry residing in the vicinity of Therfield.

The author and genealogist Charles Edward Banks states that Warren came from [London](#) and was called a “merchant” of that city (Mourt). Richard Warren was one of those very few English merchants who signed on to make the *Mayflower* voyage as a member of the Leiden contingent. His reason for this has not been determined, and given his status, it is unusual that little is actually known of him.

The *Mayflower*

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:The_Mayflower_Compact_1620_cph.3g07155.jpg

Signing the Mayflower Compact 1620, a painting by [Jean Leon Gerome Ferris](#) 1899

At the time of the *Mayflower's* voyage in 1620, Richard and his wife had five daughters: Mary, Ann, Sarah, Elizabeth and Abigail. But Richard came on the *Mayflower* alone, deciding to wait until conditions in the New World were satisfactory before bringing over his family. Bradford's recollection of that time: “Mr. Richard Warren, but his wife and children were left behind, and came afterwards.”

The *Mayflower* departed [Plymouth, England](#) on September 6/16, 1620. The small, 100 ft (30 m) ship had 102 passengers and a crew of about 30-40 in extremely cramped conditions. By the second month out, the ship was being buffeted by strong westerly gales, causing the ship's timbers to be badly shaken with caulking failing to keep out sea water, and with passengers, even in their berths, lying wet and ill. This, combined with a lack of proper rations and unsanitary conditions for several months, attributed to what would be fatal for many, especially the majority of women and children. On the way there were two deaths, a crew member and a passenger, but the worst was yet to come after arriving at their destination when, in the space of several months, almost half the passengers perished in cold, harsh, unfamiliar New England winter.

On November 9/19, 1620, after about 3 months at sea, including a month of delays in England, they spotted land, which was the Cape Cod Hook, now called [Provincetown Harbor](#). After several days of trying to get south to their planned destination of the [Colony of Virginia](#), strong winter seas forced them to return to the harbor at Cape Cod hook, where they anchored on November 11/21. The *Mayflower Compact* was signed that day. Richard Warren's name appears 12th in the list.

In the New World

He participated in some of the early explorations of Cape Cod, when a suitable settlement location was being searched for.

One such extensive exploration began on Wednesday, December 6, 1620 in freezing weather using the ship's shallop, a light, shallow-water boat with oars and sails which was navigated by two pilots, with a master gunner and three sailors. Pilgrims on board, in addition to Richard Warren, were senior members

(Governor) Carver, Bradford, Standish and Winslow along with John and Edward Tilley, John Howland, Stephen Hopkins and Hopkins servant, Edward Doty. These persons were less than half the number of the previous exploration due to many having been felled by illness, the English exploring in freezing temperatures wearing unsuitable clothing due to not planning for the severity of the New England winter weather. This exploration would result in their first encounter with Indians and did not turn out well, as they learned that slow-firing muskets were no match for rapid-fire arrows. This Indian challenge to the Pilgrims was later known as the First Encounter.

In 1623 Warren felt that conditions were right to bring his family over from England, and they arrived that year on the *Anne*.

In the 1623 Division of Land, Warren received two “akers” (acres) of land in one area – “these lye one the north side of the towne nexte adjoyning to their gardens which came in Fortune” and five acres in another – “these following lye on the other side of the towne towards the eele-riuer (Eel River)” (as Richard “Waren”).

In Plymouth two more children were added to their family - in 1624 his wife Elizabeth gave birth to a son Nathaniel and in 1626 another son, Joseph.”

In 1626 twenty seven Plymouth settlers , called Purchasers, were involved with the colony joint-stock company which afterwards was turned over to the control of senior colony members. That group was called Undertakers, and were made up of such as Bradford, Standish and Allerton initially who were later joined by Winslow, Brewster, Howland, Alden, Prence and others from London, former Merchant Adventurers. The agreement was dated October 26, 1626 and was finalized sometime in 1627. Richard Warren may have originally been a party to the agreement, but due to his death, which may have been sometime in 1628, his name on the charter was replaced by that of his wife, recorded as “Elizabeth Warren, widow.”^[1] Elizabeth Warren, as a widow, was named in a law passed by the Plymouth Court specifically to give her the Purchaser status that her husband had – “hee dying before he had performed the bargaine, the said Elizabeth performed the same after his decease, ...”

In the 1627 Division of Cattle, Richard, his wife and their seven children, in the ninth lot, received several animals that had arrived on the ship Jacob, apparently in 1625. The ninth lot also listed John Billington and the Soule (spelled Sowle) family.

In his “Increasings and Decreasings”, Bradford assigns Richard Warren the title of “Mr.” which indicates someone of status, but does not mention him at all in his recording of Plymouth history. And except for a few mentions elsewhere, not very much is known about him in Plymouth, but the Warren family does seem to have been among those with wealth.

During her widowhood, Elizabeth Warren’s name is noted in Plymouth Colony records. She was listed as the executor of her husband’s estate, paying taxes as head of household and as an independent agent in her own right.

Marriage and Children

Richard Warren married Elizabeth Walker, daughter of Augustine Walker, on April 14, 1610, at Great Amwell, Hertfordshire.

Children of Richard and Elizabeth Warren:

- Mary was born about 1610 and died on March 27, 1683 in Plymouth. She married Robert Bartlett about 1629 and had eight children. He died between September 19 and October 29, 1676 in Plymouth. She and her husband were buried at White Horse Cemetery Plymouth, Mass.
- Ann was born about 1611/2 and died after February 19, 1675/6. She married Thomas Little on April 28, 1633 in Plymouth and had nine children. He died shortly before March 12, 1671/2 in Marshfield.
- Sarah was born about 1613 and died after July 15, 1696. She married John Cooke, son of [Francis Cooke](#), on March 28, 1634 and had five children. He died on November 23, 1695 in Dartmouth.
- Elizabeth was born about 1615 and died on March 9, 1669/70 in Hingham. She married Richard Church by 1635/6 and had eleven children. He died December 27, 1668 in Dedham.

- Abigail was born about 1619 and died after January 3, 1692/3 in Marshfield. She married Anthony Snow on November 8, 1639 in Plymouth and had six children. He died in August 1692 in Marshfield.
- Nathaniel was born about 1624 in Plymouth and died between July 21 and and October 31, 1667 in Plymouth. He married Sarah Walker on November 19, 1645 in Plymouth and had twelve children. She died on November 24, 1700.
- Joseph was born by 1627 in Plymouth and died on May 4, 1689 in Plymouth. He married Priscilla Faunce about 1653 and had six children. She died on May 15, 1707 in Plymouth.

Richard Warren death and burial

Richard Warren died of unknown causes, possibly sometime in 1628, exact date unknown. Nathaniel Morton in his 1669 book *New England's Memorial*, p. 68, recorded that "This Year (1628) died Mr. Richard Warren, who was an useful Instrument; and during his life bare a deep share of the Difficulties and Troubles of the first Settlement of the Plantation of New-Plymouth [sic]."

From Bradford's recorded Plymouth history: "Mr. Richard Warren lived some *4* or *5* years, and had his wife come over to him, by whom he had *2* sons before (he) dyed; and one of them is maryed, and hath *2* children. So his increase is *4* But he had *5* daughters more came over with his wife, who are all married, and living, and have many children."

Banks states that Richard Warren died before 1628 and it probable that he was considerably past middle life at the time of emigration in 1620.^[3] Richard Warren was buried at Burial Hill in Plymouth.

Richard Warren's widow Elizabeth would live to be more than ninety years of age, dying on October 2, 1673. Her death as noted in Plymouth Colony records: "Misstris Elizabeth Warren, an aged widow, ... haveing lived a godly life, came to her grave as a shoke of corn fully ripe". She was buried at Burial Hill in Plymouth.

-http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Richard_Warren

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

PEREGRINE WHITE

MA

Ancestor of Dorothy Alderson Starkey

Peregrine White was the first English child born to the pilgrims in the New World. His name means "one who journeys to foreign lands." His birth on November 20, 1620, took place on the *Mayflower* while it was anchored in Provincetown Harbor. His parents, William and Suzanna White and older brother, Resolved (about five at the time) remained aboard ship until they decided where they would settle.

Because he was the first child born after arriving at the New World, he was given 2 00 acres of land from the General Court. Peregrine had his first military experience at the age of sixteen and continued to serve in the military, first as a lieutenant and then as a captain. Like most of the settlers, he was a farmer. He also served his community as a representative to the General Court.

Peregrine married Sarah Basset about 1648. The Bassets had considerable land in Marshfield and the couple moved onto his in-laws' land, buying several adjacent pieces of property as the years progressed. Peregrine and Sarah had seven children.

At the age of seventy-eight he officially joined the Marshfield church. He lived in the town until 1704, dying in Marshfield at the age of eighty-four.

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

WILLIAM WHITE
MA
Ancestor of Marion Knowles

William White (c. 1580 - February 21, 1621). Accompanied by his wife Susanna, son Resolved and two servants, he travelled in 1620 on the historic voyage of the Pilgrim ship *Mayflower*. He was a signatory to the Mayflower Compact and perished early in the history of Plymouth Colony.



Mayflower in Plymouth Harbor by William Halsall (1882)

English origins

William White has been a difficult person to research, largely because of the commonness of his name in England. Per author Edward Banks, his surname was one of the dozen commonest names in England and his baptismal name one of the four most frequently bestowed in that period, making genealogical research quite difficult. And contrary to internet information about his supposed White family ancestry, per the Mayflower Society Families book, Volume 13, the Society states “Little is known about Pilgrim William White.”

Further, there is confusion about William White in Leiden. Records reveal that there were two men of that name living there, other than *Mayflower* William White about 1620 and both appear to have been still there after the *Mayflower* departed. Aside from the William Whites in Leiden confusion, an additional contributing factor was the name of the wife of one of the William Whites – Ann – which erroneously has connected the Whites with the Fuller family.

Other evidence of the William White family coming to the *Mayflower* from England and not Holland comes from William Bradford's passenger list which has “Mr. William White” in his section for London merchants along with Mr. Christopher Martin, Mr. William Mullins, Mr. Stephen Hopkins, Mr. Richard Warren, and John Billington. It is believed that if William White had been a member of the Leiden congregation, his name would have appeared in Bradford's work for that section, but it does not. There is no evidence to associate the William White of the *Mayflower* with Leiden, Holland.

The *Mayflower* Voyage

William White came on board the *Mayflower* with his pregnant wife Susanna, son Resolved, then about five years in age and two servants. Susanna gave birth to their son Peregrine on board the *Mayflower* several weeks after White signed the Mayflower Compact.

The White family, as recalled by William Bradford in 1651, per their Mayflower voyage, and the birth of Peregrine: “Mr. William White, and Susana, his wife, and one sone, called Resolved, and one

borne a ship-bord, called Peregriene; and *2* servants, named William Holbeck and Edward Thomson.”



Signing the Mayflower Compact 1620, a painting by Jean Leon Gerome Ferris 1899

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:The_Mayflower_Compact_1620_cph.3g07155.jpg

The *Mayflower* departed Plymouth, England, September 6/16, 1620. The small, 100-foot ship had 102 passengers and a crew of about 30-40 in extremely cramped conditions. By the second month out, the ship was being buffeted by strong westerly gales, causing the ship's timbers to be badly shaken with caulking failing to keep out sea water, and with passengers, even in their berths, lying wet and ill. This, combined with a lack of proper rations and unsanitary conditions for several months, attributed to what would be fatal for many, especially the majority of women and children. On the way there were two deaths, a crew member and a passenger, but the worst was yet to come after arriving at their destination when, in the space of several months, almost half the passengers perished in cold, harsh, unfamiliar New England winter.

On November 9/19, 1620, after about 3 months at sea, including a month of delays in England, they spotted land, which was the Cape Cod Hook, now called Provincetown Harbor. After several days of trying to get south to their planned destination of the Colony of Virginia, strong winter seas forced them to return to the harbor at Cape Cod hook, where they anchored on November 11/21. The Mayflower Compact was signed that day.

William White was the eleventh signatory to the Mayflower Compact. His servants William Holbeck and Edward Thompson were not of age and could not sign the Compact.

In Plymouth Colony

William White died late in the first winter on February 21, 1621. With the death of her husband, Susanna White, with newborn Peregrine and five year old Resolved, became the only surviving widow out of the many families who perished that winter. By the Spring of 1621, 52 of the 102 persons who originally had arrived on the Mayflower at Cape Cod would be dead.

In May 1621, Susanna White became the first Plymouth colony bride, marrying Edward Winslow, a fellow *Mayflower* passenger whose wife had perished on March 24, 1621. At least five children were born to Edward Winslow and his wife Susanna.

And though deceased, in the 1623 Division of Land, White received five acres (akers) “lyeth behind the forte to the little ponde.” (lying behind the fort to the little pond). Edward Winslow, his wife Susanna's husband since May 12, 1621, received four acres in the same section. White's sons Resolved and Peregrine were both listed with their step-father Edward Winslow and mother Susanna in the 1627 Division of Cattle, and moved with their parents to Marshfield in 1632.

About 1638, the Winslows moved with Susanna's sons Resolved and Peregrine White, to Green

Harbor, now called Marshfield Massachusetts. Edward Winslow later became Governor of Plymouth County, and was also the colony agent in England. In England, his diplomatic skills soon came to the attention of Oliver Cromwell, the new Puritan leader of the country. Cromwell required Winslow head a joint award reparations commission to assess damage caused by Danish ships.

Edward Winslow lived in England the last six years of his life, serving the government there. When his will was written in 1654 as resident of London, the document stated that he left his New England property to his son Josiah "hee (sic) allowing to my wife a full third parte thereof for her life also" so it is probable that his wife did not follow him to London. Edward Winslow died of fever May 7/8, 1655 while on a British military expedition in the Caribbean.

There is no trace of Susanna's death beyond a sales record in 1647, and no further record of Susanna has been found. Though she was the wife of one colony governor and the mother of another, the first bride in the colony and the mother of the famed Peregrine White, she seems forgotten in the records.

The Mayflower Society has refuted the reported maiden surname of 'Fuller' for Susanna White and has determined that the maiden name of Susanna White is unknown. Further, Susanna _____ (White) Winslow, was not the sister of Dr. Samuel Fuller as is often stated. The Samuel and Edward Fuller who traveled on the *Mayflower* were sons of Robert Fuller of Redenhall, England. Robert had a daughter Anna, born about 1578, far too old a bride for Winslow who was not born until 1595. The 1615 will of Robert Fuller mentions no daughter named Susanna, nor a daughter married to William White. It does mention Alice Bradford, a sister-in-law. In a letter that Edward Winslow wrote in 1623 to "Uncle Robert Jackson", he provided news of Susanna, her late husband William White, and her children. He also sends his regards to his father-in-law in England, obviously not Robert Fuller who had been dead for nine years.

Another misrepresentation is that William White once lived in Holland. For many years genealogists assumed that William White spent his early married years in Holland, marrying and burying children but no proof that they apply to the Pilgrim William White but rather they probably apply to the William White who was still living there in 1621.

Family of William White and Suzanna

William White married Suzanna ca 1612 (a marriage to Anna Fuller was disproven years ago) and had two sons. White died on February 21, 1621. Susanna remarried on May 12, 1621 to Edward Winslow and had five children with him. The death date of Susanna is uncertain – sometime between 1654 and 1675. She was buried in Winslow Cemetery in Marshfield where her sons Resolved and Peregrine White and their wives were buried. Edward Winslow died on a British military expedition in the Caribbean in 1655 and was buried at sea.

Children of William White and his wife Suzanna:

- Resolved White was born in England, about 1615. He died sometime after September 19, 1687. He and his first wife Judith were buried in Winslow Cemetery, Marshfield. He married: 1. Judith Vassall, daughter of William Vassall, on November 5, 1640 in Scituate. She was born in England ca. 1619, and was buried in the Winslow Cemetery in Marshfield on April 3, 1670. They had eight children born in Scituate between 1642 and 1656. 2. Abigail (_____) Lord, widow of William Lord, on October 5, 1674 in Salem. She was born in England ca. 1606 and died in Salem between June 15 and 27, 1682.^[4]

- Peregrine White was born aboard the ship Mayflower late in November 1620 and died in Marshfield on July 20, 1704. He married Sarah Bassett, daughter of William Bassett, by March 6, 1648/9 and had seven children. She died in Marshfield on January 22, 1711.^[26]

The fate of the White family as recalled by William Bradford in 1651: "Mr. White dyed soon after ther landing. His wife married with Mr. Winslow (as is before noted). His *2* sons are married, and Resolved hath *5* children, Peregrine tow (sic), all living. So their increase are now *7*."^[1]

Death of William White

William White died on February 21, 1621. He was buried in Coles Hill Burial Ground in Plymouth, likely in an unmarked grave as with most from the Mayflower who died that first winter. His name appears on the Pilgrim Memorial Tomb (sarcophagus) on Coles Hill. The date of death of his wife Susanna, who became the second wife of Edward Winslow, is uncertain. She was buried in the Winslow Cemetery, Marshfield, as were her sons Resolved and Peregrine and their families. Edward Winslow died on a British military expedition in the Caribbean in 1655 and was buried at sea.

Servants traveling in company with the William White family on the Mayflower

- **William Holbeck.** He boarded Mayflower as an indentured servant. He did not sign the Mayflower Compact so it may be presumed he was under the age of twenty-one, possibly in his teens. His surname was a not especially a common one. It may be assumed that he came from the same region of England as the White family, but the origins of this family have not been located.

William Holbeck died during the first winter at Plymouth. William Bradford reporting that “Mr. White and his two servants died soon after landing.”

- **Edward Thomson (or Thompson).** He boarded the Mayflower as a servant to William White. He did not sign the Mayflower Compact which indicates he was not yet twenty-one years of age, and was probably in his teens. His English origins are unknown and due to his very common name, difficult to research. He may have come from the same area of England as the White family, whose origins are also unknown. Edward Thompson was the first Mayflower passenger to die, as reported by William Bradford, after the ship's arrival at Cape Cod, probably on December 4, 1620. This was several weeks before the Pilgrims located and decided to settle at Plymouth. Several memorials to he and others from the Mayflower who were the earliest to die exist today at Provincetown on Cape Cod.

- [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William_White_\(Mayflower_passenger\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William_White_(Mayflower_passenger))

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

LIEUTENANT FRANCIS WHITMORE
MA
Ancestor of Virginia Mary Coleman Brunson

Under King Charles 1st of England life could be hard. The threat of an English Civil War, very high taxes to support his wars and his persecution of both Protestants and Catholics, encouraged people to search for a better life in the colonies. It must have taken courage as there were many uncertainties about moving to such a place as America. Stories of failed colonies, fears that native people were violent, no source of food or water and exposure to unknown diseases were prevalent. But the lure of adventure and finding a better and easier place to live was a draw.

Richard Parke and Margery Crane were married in a town called Staffordshire, England. They immigrated to Plymouth, Massachusetts early in their marriage. After arriving they produced ten children, the fifth of whom was Isabel Parke, born 1628.

Nicholas Wetmore, born 1595 in Herefordshire, England, married Mrs. Nicholas Wetmore, b. 1600. They had 8 children, the third of which was Francis Wetmore (Sr.)

Francis Whitmore (Sr.) (1625-1685), came to the colonies and settled in Cambridge, Massachusetts. Leaving Dad in England, his mother followed Francis to the colonies, but she did not enjoy her new life for long as she died in Connecticut in 1637. Somewhere along the way vanity prevailed, and the Wetmores changed their name to Whitmore..

Francis Whitmore (Sr.) married Isabel Parke. They produced the usual ten children, the last of whom was (Lieutenant) Francis Whitmore, my qualifying ancestor. Lieutenant Francis Whitmore, was born October 12, 1650 in Cambridge, Middlesex, Massachusetts and died September 9, 1700 in Cambridge. He met and in 1674 married Hannah Harris of Middletown, Middlesex, Connecticut.. Her father was a London merchant. Middletown was located on a river and, at that time, was a busy sailing port along with Boston and New York. Lieutenant Francis commanded a company of militia, and was in charge of the Middletown Band. He and Hannah had ten living children. They named number ten, Francis.

1710 The Whitmore's daughter, Edith, married Jacob Cornwell.

1749 The Cromwell's daughter, Ruth, married Amos Coleman.

1754 Ruth and Amos Coleman produced another ancestor, Deacon Nathaniel Coleman, a soldier in the Revolutionary War. He participated in the Boston Tea Party and the Battle of Bunker Hill.

References:

Wake Family History (on line), History of Middletown, Middlesex, Connecticut, Copies of family bibles documenting births, etc., History of England under King Charles I.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

HENRY WITHINGTON

MA

Ancestor of Susan Ahlering, Jeanne Frost and Alison Gildred

Henry Withington, of Leigh, County Lancaster, England, and Dorchester, Massachusetts, the ancestor of most of the name in the United States, was baptized in the parish of Leigh, County Lancaster, England, 22 February 1589/90, the son of George and Margaret Withington, and died at Dorchester, Massachusetts, 2 February 1666/7. He married first, at Leigh, in September 1615, Anne Leech, who was buried at Leigh 26 September 1621, daughter of Richard and Anne (Yate) Leech, secondly, at Leigh, 30 September 1622, Elizabeth Smith, who died at Dorchester, 16 February 1660, sister of Thomas Smith, a well-known merchant of London, and thirdly at Dorchester, in June 1662, Margery (Turner) Paul, who died at Dorchester 20 May 1676, widow of Richard Paul of Taunton, Massachusetts. A deed of settlement from Henry Withington to her is dated 25 June 1662. With his second wife and his four children, he came to Dorchester, probably in the same ship (the *Jalnes*) with the Reverend Richard Mather and his company, arriving 16 August 1635.

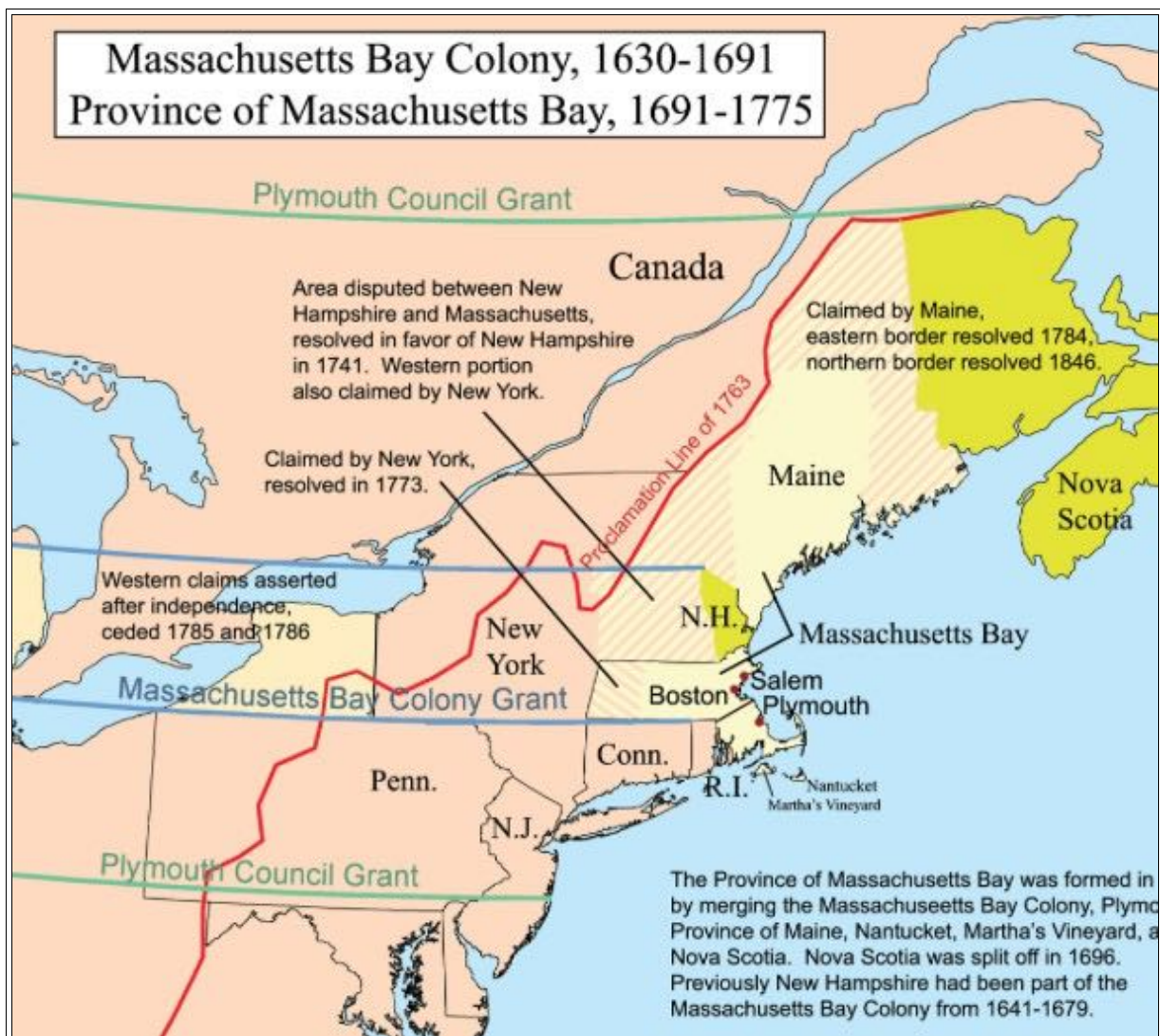
Henry was one of the signers of the covenant by which the Dorchester church was founded. He was the first ruling elder of the church, continuing in that office for twenty-nine years until his death. He was one of the selectmen of Dorchester in 1636, and was otherwise prominent in the affairs of the town and church. However, there appears to be no record of his having been made a freeman. Henry shared in the division of lands in Dorchester, was a blacksmith by trade, and was one of the founders and original shareholders in the first ironworks in the American Colonies, on the Mill River in Taunton. Its original founder and operator, James Leonard, Sr., evidently intended the mill to be named for Henry Withington, notwithstanding the corruption of the name to "Whittington" and "Whittenton." On 23 April 1638, Henry purchased and occupied the house built on the lot in Dorchester formerly owned by Matthias Sension (or St. John). Sension went from Dorchester to Windsor, Connecticut, and was one of the founders of the church there.

The Reverend Richard Mather called Henry "Beloved Friend" and made him overseer of his will in 1664. The Reverend Samuel Danforth said "A man that excelled in wisdom, meekness and goodness."

By his will dated 18 November 1664, Withington states that he is "about the age of 76 years or upon 77." The total inventory of the estate was valued at 850 pounds, 17 shillings, and 3 pence.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors
Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

Maine



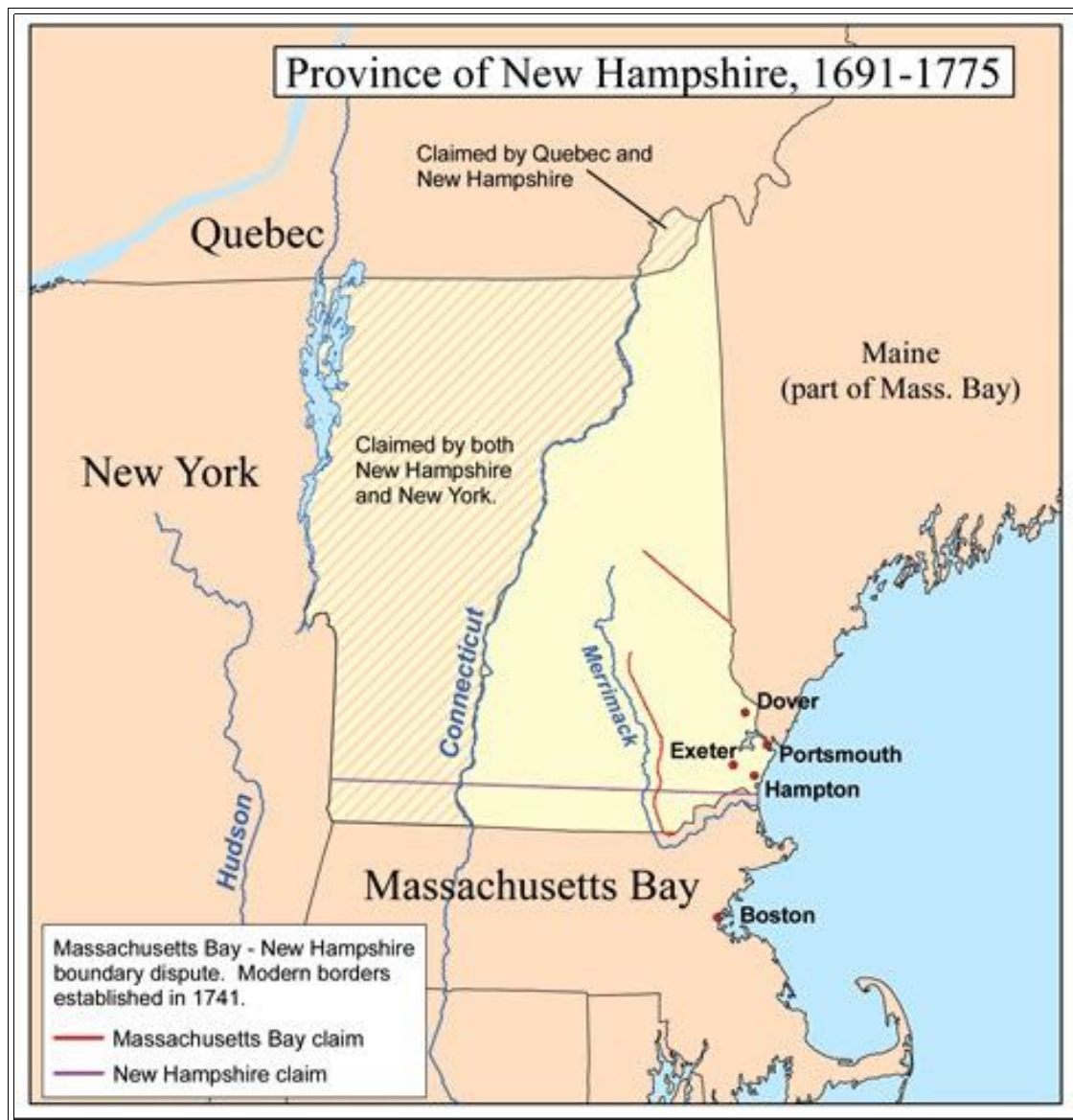
Maine Claimed a Portion of the Massachusetts Bay Colony
http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Massachusetts_Bay_Colony

[Click on Specific Ancestor for Biography](#)
 (None at this time)

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

New Hampshire



http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Province_of_New_Hampshire

[Click on Specific Ancestor for Biography](#)

EDMUND LITTLEFIELD Ancestor of Sara Anne Wilson

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

EDMUND LITTLEFIELD
NH
Ancestor of Sara Anne Wilson

Edmund Littlefield probably came to New England in the summer of 1635 with his two eldest sons. He was present in England when his wife Annis became pregnant with their last child, Francis the younger, and absent by 1635/6 when he was named as a defendant in a lawsuit over business differences arising from his operations as a clothier. It is not known how the suit was eventually settled. Edmund is on record as being in Boston in the spring of 1637, and in 1638. His wife and six children followed on the *Bevis* in May of 1638, with servants John Knight and Hugh Durdal.

Edmund Littlefield's name appears on the Exeter Combination, signed on 5 June 1639. He was granted 21 acres of land there, in two lots in the first division of uplands. In 1643 he joined the Reverend John Wheelwright in the purchase of a large tract of land on the Maine coast from Thomas Gorges, son of Sir Ferdinando Gorges, which is now the town of Wells, Maine. There is a plaque in Wells (next to the Webhannet Falls on the site of his mill) stating that his sawmill and gristmill were the first permanent structures in the town.

On 14 July 1663, Thomas Gorges granted him 100 acres of land adjacent to the mill and the neck of the marsh between the mill and Webhannet River. The first year he was the agent for Richard Vines (appointed governor of the plantation at Saco, 2 September 1639) to give possession of the land to settlers.

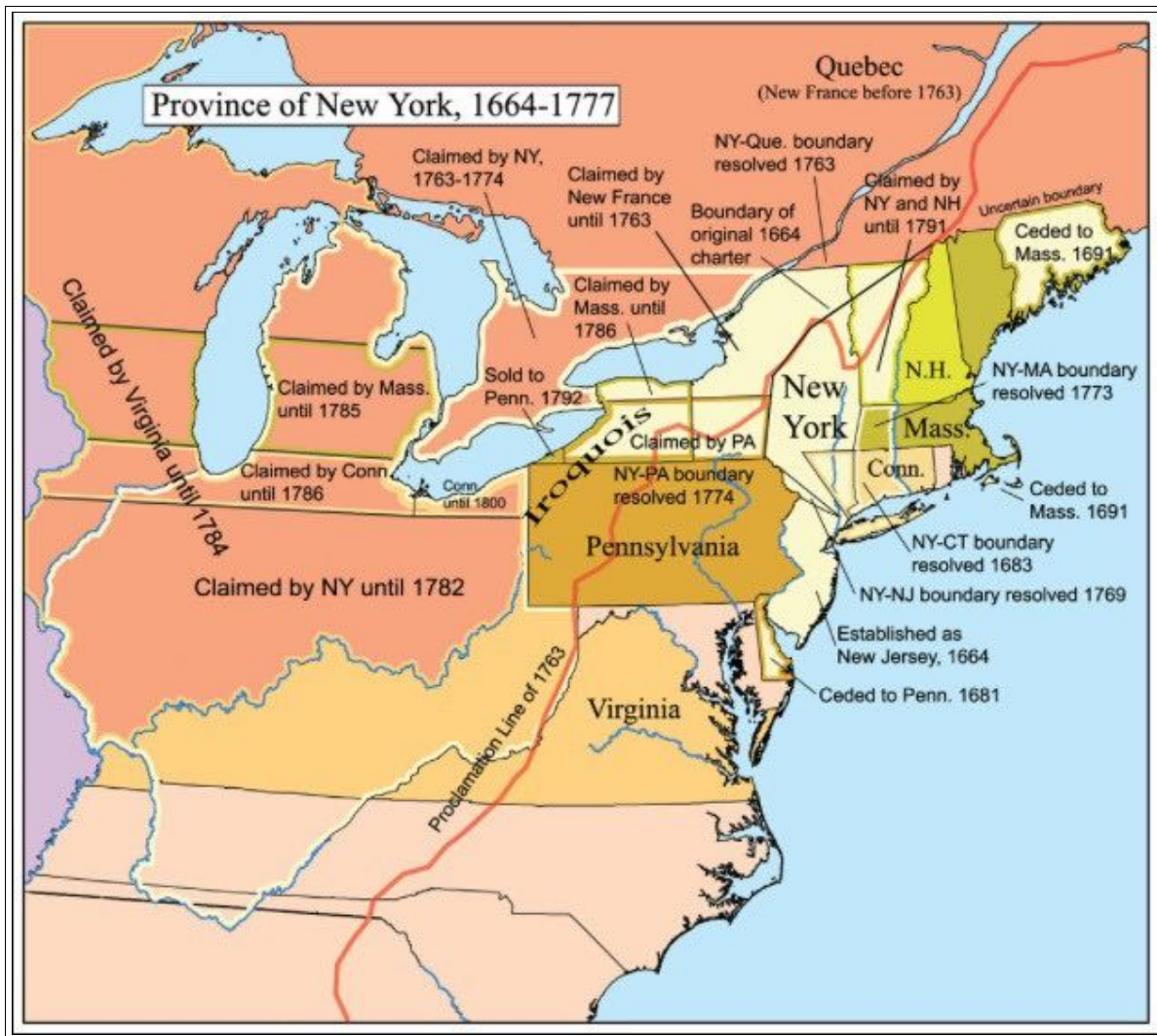
In November 1645, he and John Wadleigh were granted 200 acres on the southwest side of the Ogunquit River, not encroaching on the town of Wells. Evidence of his various activities indicates he acted in several capacities in the town of Wells. He took the oath of allegiance on 5 July 1653. He was authorized in 1654 to sell wine and strong liquor to the Indians. He was selectman in 1654 and 1657.

Edmund's will is dated 11 December 1661; a family compromise was signed 17 December by his sons Francis Sr., Thomas, and Francis Jr. as well as his widow. Inventory was taken 24 December 1661.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

New Jersey



http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Province_of_New_York

The Province of New Jersey was one of the **Middle Colonies** of **Colonial America** and became the **U.S. state** of **New Jersey** in 1776. The province had originally been settled by Europeans as part of **New Netherland**, but came under **English** rule after the surrender of **Fort Amsterdam** in 1664, becoming a **proprietary colony**. The **Dutch Republic** reasserted control for a brief period in 1673–1674. After that it consisted of two political divisions, **East Jersey** and **West Jersey**, until they were united as a **royal colony** in 1702. The original boundaries of the province were slightly larger than the current state, extending into a part of the present state of **New York**, until the border was finalized in 1773.[1]

[Click on Specific Ancestor for Biography](#)

EDWARD BALL Ancestor of Una Davis

JAMES BOLLEN Ancestor of Nancy Assaf
• **New Netherland – 1685**

MASKELL EWING Ancestor of Anne Timmons Marshall, Frances Rowley Marshall,
Catherine Marshall Nelson, and Margaret Marshall Paredes

NATHANIEL SCUDDER Ancestor of Jeri Scudder

RICHARD STOUT Ancestor of Rebecca Bradbury and Lisa Wyatt Bradbury

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

EDWARD BALL
NJ
Ancestor of Una Davis

Edward Ball was born Wales and crossed the Atlantic with his two brothers. There is no record of his father but there is of this grandfather John Ball who was born in Oxford England in 1585. He was born in 1642, married Abigail Blatchley together had six children. The Ball brothers were among the first settlers of Branford, CT. Edward moved to the New Jersey settlement while his brothers went on to Virginia. He was a prominent man of Newark, and held a number of offices, including that of High Sheriff and of Committeeman of Boundaries on settlement with the proprietors, the Indians and others.

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

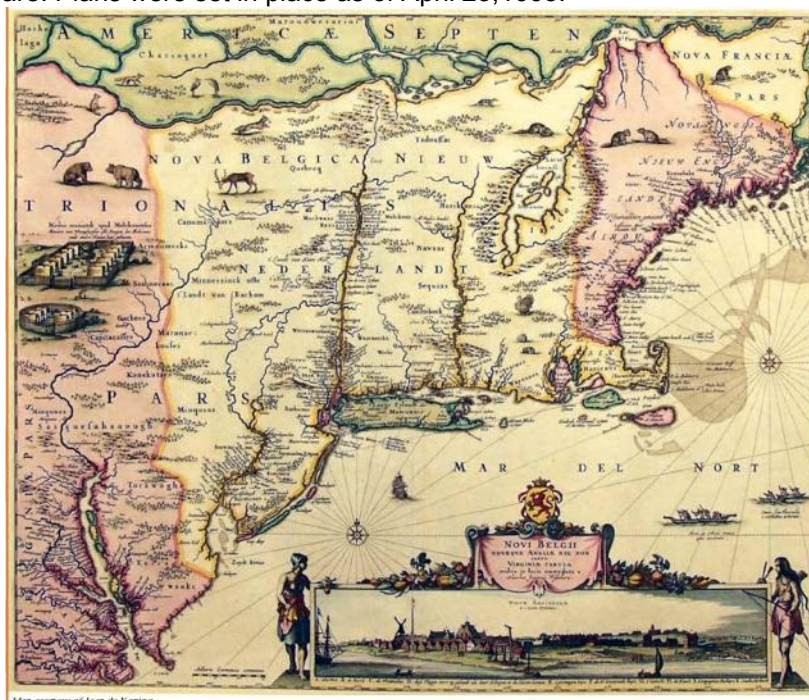
[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

JAMES BOLLEN
NJ
Ancestor of Nancy Corbin Assaf

James Bollen was born in 1629 in England. He married Anne Vauquellin, daughter of Robert Vauquellin in 1655. She was four years younger, having been born on the Isle of Jersey in 1633. He was educated and was engaged in business in 1661 when diarist Samuel Pepys recorded his visit on Monday, Dec. 16, 1661 as follows: "Up by five o'clock by candlelight (which I have not done for many a day) being called upon by one Mr. Bollen by appointment, who has business to be done with my Lord Privy Seal (Sir

John Robartes) this morning and so by coach, call Mr. (Henry) Moore at Wardrobe, to Chelsy and there did get my Lord to seal it."

Following the restoration of Charles II on May 25, 1660, the King was interested in expanding England's land holdings in North America. He especially wanted to gain the land controlled by the Dutch as New Netherland which lay between the Southern Colonies of Georgia, South Carolina, North Carolina, Virginia and Maryland and the Northern Colonies of New Hampshire, Massachusetts Bay, Rhode Island and Connecticut. These lands were destined to become the Middle Colonies of Pennsylvania, New York, New Jersey and Delaware. Plans were set in place as of April 23, 1663.



New Netherland - 1685

"Novi Belgii Novæque Angliæ: nec non partis Virginie tabula multis in locis emendata, Nieuw Amsterdam op t eylant Manhattans" by Nicolaum Visscher, Amsterdam, 1685. DIGITAL ID: g3715 ct000001 URL: <http://hdl.loc.gov/loc.gmd/g3715.ct000001> SOURCE: Library of Congress Geography and Map Division Washington, D.C.

1664 was a very crucial year for Charles II and for James Bollen. James, Duke of York and Lord High Admiral of the Navy, organized a military mission to wrest control of New Netherland from the Dutch. These lands had been granted to James by his brother, Charles II, as of March 12, 1664 and had then been conveyed by the Duke of York to Sir George Carteret and John, Lord Berkeley, as Lords Proprietors in June 1664, in recognition of their loyalty to the Stuarts during the English Civil War.

Headed by Colonel Richard Nicolls (soon to be appointed Governor of New York), and including Captain James Bollen, several Royal commissioners and 450 men with their officers, they departed in April 1664 on four well-armed frigates. The secret convoy traveled to Boston, arriving in late July, to meet with leaders of the Massachusetts Bay and Connecticut colonies for one month of consultation, before continuing on to Fort Amsterdam to confront the Dutch Governor Peter Stuyvesant. Nicolls demanded surrender of all the lands of New Netherland to the English Crown. After a ten day delay, the surrender on September 8, 1664 was accomplished without a shot being fired. Captain Bollen was designated by Nicolls as one of the persons to receive the surrender and was placed in charge of Ft. James as Commissary of Ammunitions. New Amsterdam was renamed New York after James, Duke of York. By 1702, the two sectors of West Jersey and East Jersey would be reunited as the royal Colony of New Jersey under Queen Anne of England.

James Bollen was likely appointed to be Secretary of the Colony in 1665 by Sir George Carteret, who also appointed a distant cousin, Philip Carteret, to become Governor. Bollen, Robert Vauquellin, and the Governor's secretary, William Pardon, were closely associated with Governor Philip Carteret over the years until his death and that of Bollen in 1782. It was a turbulent time for Governor Carteret whose authoritarian governance irritated and upset the colonists, along with his ignoring of "The Concessions and Agreement of the Lords Proprietors of New Caesarea or New Jersey," dated Feb. 10, 1665. This document was developed by George Carteret and Berkeley to encourage self-government, freedom of religion, and generous grants of land for settlement. Bollen remained a trusted and loyal associate of the Governor. Over the years, as Secretary of the Colony (1665-1682) and President of the Court in Woodbridge (1678- 1681), James Bollen was involved in countless business transactions, including grants of lands by proprietors, conveyance of real estate, chronicling of all public affairs, handling land purchase and sales, initiating correspondence, interactions with the Lenni-Lenape Indian tribe, handling wills and divorces and performing marriages. He served as an ex-officio member of the Governor's Council.

There is evidence that James had four children: George Bollen, a mariner working at the port of New York, who sailed with Captain William Kidd as first mate on the good ship *Adventure Galley*; Mary Bollen who married into the Stout family, marrying Peter Stout (1650-1703); Anna Throckmorton Bollen who married Jonathan Stout (1660-Nov.24, 1723) on August 27, 1685 and had nine children (three girls and six boys); and James Bollen, reported to be a carpenter in Middlesex, New Jersey during his adult years. It is possible that some of these children were born on the Isle of Jersey, the largest of the Channel Islands and the home of Sir George Carteret. The Vauquillen family resided there for generations.

James Bollen was a very hard-working and trusted civil official of the fledging colony of New Jersey. He helped its leaders to establish and maintain the institutions of civil society.

Surprisingly, James Bollen died intestate on March 27, 1682. Two of his children, Anna and James, petitioned to have guardians appointed, apparently being under the age of 18 at the time. While there is no known biography of James Bollen in existence, his official transactions during the last 18 years of his life in New Jersey are documented throughout the colonial records of New Jersey.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

MASKELL EWING

NJ

Ancestor of Anne Timmons Marshall, Frances Rowley Marshall, Catherine Marshall Nelson, and Margaret Marshall Paredes

My Colonial Dames relative is Maskell Ewing (1721-1796) who was a Surrogate in the Prerogative Court, West Jersey in 1761, 1762 and 1767. He was a freeholder, and a judge of the common pleas in 1777 and in 1791. He was justice of the peace in 1776, 1786 and 1791. He was commissioned a Surrogate for the West Jersey in March 1762 and held that office until 1776 when he resigned, holding loyalty to the Revolutionary Government.

Born 31 March 1721 in Greenwich, Cumberland County, New Jersey, he was the first born of Thomas Ewing, who was born in Londonderry, Ireland in 1695, and Mary Maskell, born in Greenwich in 1701. Mother Mary Maskell Ewing was a third generation American, quite unusual I would think. Her grandfather Thomas Parsons, though born in Dorset, England, had married Lydia Brown in the Colony of Connecticut, and their daughter Bethia had married Thomas Maskell in Connecticut. Bethia died young and Thomas Maskell and his son, Thomas, went first to Long Island and then on to Greenwich, along with quite a migration of Presbyterian folks. There young Thomas married Marcy Stathem and had a daughter Mary, who married Thomas Ewing in Greenwich 27 March 1720. Thomas Ewing must have had a British accent.

I have visited Greenwich, a low country, almost swamp-like, with long vistas and plenty of waterways intersecting vast fields of rice and wheat. There is a Ewing House now occupied by non-Ewings and when I was there on a bright Saturday morning in June, there were "hot wheels" on the front porch. The town meanders on one road along the edge of the swampland and the Cohansey River. The cemetery across the road from the Greenwich Presbyterian Church contains at least two dozen of my ancestors and is kept remarkably tidy and trimmed. The DAR has distributed many flags through the rows of markers, including one for Maskell Ewing's son-in-law James Booth Hunt.

On 31 March 1743, Maskell Ewing married Mary Pagett and they had ten children. The most important one to me is daughter, Sarah, fifth daughter, sixth child, born 19 April 1756. She married James Booth Hunt on 12 May 1782 after his heroism with other lads from Greenwich. On the night of 22 November 1774, James Booth Hunt, his brother John, and future brothers-in-law James and Thomas Ewing, were part of the twenty-three locals who destroyed, by burning, the cargo of the English brig *Greyhound*, which had stopped on the way to Philadelphia. News of the Boston Tea Party which had occurred on the night of 16 December 1773 had obviously not been lost on these young men.

Sarah and James Booth Hunt had five children, four sons and a daughter. Their last son, William Ferguson Hunt, was my great-great grandfather and died 3 June 1860 in Coshocton, Ohio, the town where I was born 2 February 1944.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

NATHANIEL SCUDDER

NJ

Ancestor of Jeri Scudder

Of all the Scudders who served their country during the Revolution, none had a more distinguished career than Nathaniel Scudder. Physician, soldier and statesman, Dr. Scudder dedicated *his* life to helping others in matters of health, liberty and law. Nathaniel was born on 10 May 1733 in Huntington, Long Island.

His father Jacob was a prosperous mill owner. In 1749, he sold *his* holdings and moved to Princeton, New Jersey where Jacob bought several acres, including 2 gristmills, a sawmill and a fulling mill. Nathaniel was 16 at the time.

After a good basic education, Nathaniel entered Princeton, then known as the College of New Jersey. He graduated in 1751. Afterwards he qualified as a physician and moved to Monmouth County where he met and married Isabella Anderson.

In January 1776, Dr. Scudder was an active member of the New Jersey Committee of Safety. When the war approached New York and New Jersey, and the country called upon her ablest advisors and bravest defenders, Dr. Scudder gave up his lucrative medical practice and devoted himself to her service. He was immediately appointed by the Legislature as Lieutenant Colonel of the First Regiment, Monmouth County Militia. This regiment, known as the Jersey Blues, had been augmented by the creation of a third battalion by the Continental Congress in January 1776.

Lieutenant Colonel Scudder was soon promoted to Colonel. He was several times elected to the New Jersey State Legislature, prior to the outbreak of the war, and in 1776 became Speaker of the Assembly. On 20 November 1777, Colonel Scudder was elected to represent the State of New Jersey at the Continental Congress. He continued to serve until the close of 1779.

Colonel Scudder died 16 October 1781. It is sadly ironic that Nathaniel's death occurred just three days before General Cornwallis surrendered to George Washington at Yorktown. He would have rejoiced at the good news. Nathaniel was the only member of Congress to be killed in action during the Revolution and is remembered for his service in the Continental Congress and his influence in encouraging New Jersey to ratify the Articles of Confederation.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors
Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

RICHARD STOUT

NJ

Ancestor of Rebecca Bradbury and Lisa Wyatt Bradbury

"In the late summer of 1642, Penelope Kent, an English Dissenter living in Amsterdam, married a native Hollander named Van Princin. Both were just twenty and soon afterward sailed for New Amsterdam, where they hoped a long and prosperous life awaited them. The voyage was a bad one. During the fifty-eight day crossing the ship was battered by frequent storms. Finally, off Sandy Hook, New Jersey, winds piled it onto rocky shoals, and the voyagers were compelled to come ashore in treacherous dories. Nor was that the whole of their ordeal. When they landed Indians set upon them. A rain of tomahawk blows felled Van Princin. Penelope, stripped and senseless, was left for dead on the beach. A scalp lock had been taken, her left shoulder hacked, and her abdomen slashed so that loops of bowels protruded. Hours later, when she regained consciousness, Penelope found herself along with her young husband's corpse. She made her way to the margin of the woodland and crept inside a hollow tree. There, as the days passed, she kept herself alive by munching fungi and lumps of sap.

A week later one of the Lenni Lenape, an old man pursuing deer, found Penelope when his dog scented her refuge. Seeing merit in her pluck, the Indian bound up her wounds with tree withes and took her to his village. Where his squaw tended her until she recovered her strength. Months later he paddled her to New Amsterdam. There she was given shelter by a Dissenting minister, the Reverend Mr. Applegate. Although Penelope never again had full use of her left arm, she was thankful to be alive and did not dwell on her misfortunes.

Even in those turbulent times, when General Kieft's reckless policies brought open warfare between the Dutch settlers and the Indians, Penelope was admired by many for her fortitude. One of her admirers was Richard Stout, a native of Nottinghamshire serving in Kieft's guard. He was the son of John Stout, (1) a prosperous yeoman, and his wife, Elizabeth Gee.

Ten years earlier, after a quarrel with his father, who had wanted him to marry for money, Richard had left home and shipped on board a man-of-war. Before deserting his ship in New Amsterdam in 1640, Richard had served on it for seven years. On New Year's Day, 1644, Richard at last had his way and married for love when he took Penelope Van Princin for his bride.

Until 1648 the Stouts lived at Gravesend. Then they moved to Monmouth County, New Jersey, where they founded Baptist Town (later called Middletown). There they prospered, raising ten children, and harvesting bountiful crops of tobacco on lush farmland. By 1675 Richard had 750 acres under cultivation. Probably no word of this success carried to John Stout in Nottinghamshire, be he was well commemorated in the New World, nonetheless. Richard and Penelope named their first son John and their fifth, Jonathan.

In 1683, at Shackamaxon, Richard, now something of a man of affairs, was present at the peace conference between Tamenand, astute chief of the Delaware, and William Penn. When he died, at ninety in 1705, Penelope caught his excellence in a single line. "I was never unhappy with him."

Peter Stout, Richard's third son, was past fifty when his father died. At twenty he had married Mary Bullen; their son, John, was born at Middletown in 1675. Three years after his grandfather's death, John left Middletown and settled at Dragon Swamp in Delaware, where he built a cabin and took a wife, Sarah. John's son Peter, was born at Dragon Swamp on 14 April 1715, in ample time to be part of the statistical workup which shows that Penelope had 502

descendants before she died in 1732 at the age of 110. "All these sprang from one woman" one mourner said with biblical awe, "and she as good as dead."²

1. Rex Stout by John McAleer, pp535 John Stout lived, in Shakespeare's time, at Burton Joyce, in Nottinghamshire, sixty miles from Stratford-upon-Avon.

2. Rex Stout by John McAleer, pp 19-20.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

New York



http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Province_of_New_York

The **Province of New York** (1664–1783) was an [English](#) and later [British crown territory](#) that originally included all of the present [U.S. states](#) of [New York](#), [New Jersey](#), [Delaware](#) and [Vermont](#), along with inland portions of [Connecticut](#), [Massachusetts](#) and [Maine](#), as well as eastern [Pennsylvania](#). The majority of this land was soon reassigned by the Crown, leaving territory that included the valleys of the [Hudson](#) and [Mohawk Rivers](#), and Vermont. The territory of western New York was [Iroquois](#) land, also disputed between the English colonies and [New France](#), and that of Vermont was disputed with the [Province of New Hampshire](#).

The province resulted from the Dutch Republic surrender of *Provincie*

[Nieuw-Nederland](#) to the [Kingdom of England](#) in 1664. Immediately after, the province was renamed for [James, Duke of York](#), brother of [Charles II of England](#). The territory was one of the [Middle Colonies](#), and ruled at first directly from England.

The [New York Provincial Congress](#) of local representatives declared itself the government on May 22, 1775, first referred to the "[State of New York](#)" in 1776, and ratified the [New York State Constitution](#) in 1777. While the [British](#) regained [New York City](#) during the [American Revolutionary War](#) using it as its military and political base of operations in North America,[1] [2] and a British governor was technically in office, much of the remainder of the former colony was held by the [Patriots](#). British claims on any part of New York ended with the [Treaty of Paris of 1783](#).

[Click on Specific Ancestor for Biography](#)

JAMES HUBBARD Ancestor of Elizabeth Josephine Fitger Williams

ROELOF MARTENSE SCHENCK Ancestor of Jane McKee Ingram

WILLIAM WELLS Ancestor of Sherle Dodds McConnor

• **William Wells Gravestone**

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

JAMES HUBBARD

NY

Ancestor of Elizabeth Josephine Fitger Williams

Rutland County, near the center of England, is the smallest of all 38 counties. There in the village of Langham, just northwest of Oakham, the county seat, lived Henry Hubbard, a yeoman, with his wife Margaret. Henry, born in 1570, came from a long line of Norsemen known to have come to England in the 800's. Henry and Margaret already had 10 children by 1613, when son James, the youngest, was born. James grew up with the Reformation still a very important subject; people gave a great deal of time, devotion and action to the discussion of their religious ideas. Undoubtedly this was the underlying reason he decided to set sail for America at age 24 in about 1637.

The ship was bound for Boston, Massachusetts. He bought a "house and lott" in Charleston, but his life did not come to rest there. He moved first to Lynn, Massachusetts, and then in 1643 to New York Colony with a group of friends who did not agree with the stated religious beliefs of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. Among the group of friends were Sir Henry and Lady Deborah Moody, who were life long friends and supporters of James. It is said that Indian Chief "Pamamora" sold them the land which became Gravesend, Long Island. James Hubbard, who was a surveyor by trade, laid out the town of Gravesend.

James was married twice: in 1655 to Martha (there were no children), and then on 31 December 1664 to Elizabeth Bailes/Bayliss/Bailey. She was the daughter of John Bailey of Jamaica. (December 31st is important in the family as my grandmother, James and Elizabeth's direct descendant, was married on the same day in 1894). James and Elizabeth had five children: James in 1665, Rebecca 20 April 1667, Elizabeth, John and Samuel.

James was Justice of the Peace, often referred to as "Sergeant," and Magistrate of Gravesend. He was known to have "great respectability and influence." He represented Gravesend at conventions held in New Amsterdam and Hampstead, as commissioner to Connecticut to request protection for Gravesend, and was a Justice at a Court of Sessions, Gravesend. His community participation has been part of the family legacy - even before we knew of him.

It is believed that James predeceased Elizabeth, who died in 1693.

The land James Hubbard held in Gravesend seems to have come down intact to the present and is a famous horse farm, but not with the ownership in his family. My branch of the family moved in the next generation to Egg Harbor, New Jersey, and eventually west, farther west and finally to the California coast for the last four generations of James' line.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

ROELOF MARTENSE SCHENCK

NY

Ancestor of Jane McKee Ingram

Roelof Martense Schenck, my Colonial Dames ancestor, was the son of Martin Schenck and Margaretta de Brockhurst, and was born at Ameersfort in the Netherlands about 1619. He, with his brother Jan and sister Annetje, sailed to the colony of New Netherlands aboard the ship *De Yalckener* in 1650. He lived for a time in Breuklyn.

In 1660 he married Neeltje Gerretse Van Couwenhoven, daughter Wolfertse Van Couwenhoven, who in 1643, was one of the governing representatives, called "The Eight Men," who ruled the colony at that time.

When Roelof married Neeltje in 1660, New Amsterdam was a small town of about 300 houses, some churches and windmills, with a population of 1,000, grown since its original settlement in 1625. They kept very accurate birth, baptism, and marriage records, still existing today in the New York Archives. Incidentally, the suffix "se" means "child of," and is thus a help to the genealogists when reading these names.

Roelof later moved to Flatlands, Long Island, and after Neeltje died, he married twice again. There must have been many children from the union of this ancestor and his three wives, since I have already met two distant cousins descended from this gentleman. (My line is through Neeltje). Roelof served as a member of the Provincial Convention in 1674.

After the English peacefully acquired New Netherlands in 1664, and re-named it New York, few Dutch immigrants crossed the ocean. The Dutch did not mix much with the English, and according to family and other sources, they still spoke Dutch widely, even after four more generations and into the 19th Century.

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

WILLIAM WELLS:
NY
Ancestor of Sherle Dodds McConnor

William Wells seems to have been fitted by natural force of character as well as by birth and education for a leader in a little colony to which the best part of his life was given. The Southold traditions about him are many but mostly too wild and vague to be worth repeating. That he was a man of deeply religious character seems probable from his whole colonial life as well as from the inscription on his tomb. He was an early member of the First Religious Society at Southold which, though Congregational, had a pastor in English orders as long as he lived..

William Wells executed a deed in place of a will on the same day he died, conveying his entire estate to his wife, Mary, and their children. He was born in 1608 and died at Southold on November 13, 1671.

His tombstone reads:

"Here lies the body of William Wells of Southold

General Justice of the Peace and the first sheriff of New Yorkshire upon Long Island who departed this life on November 13, 1671, Age 63".



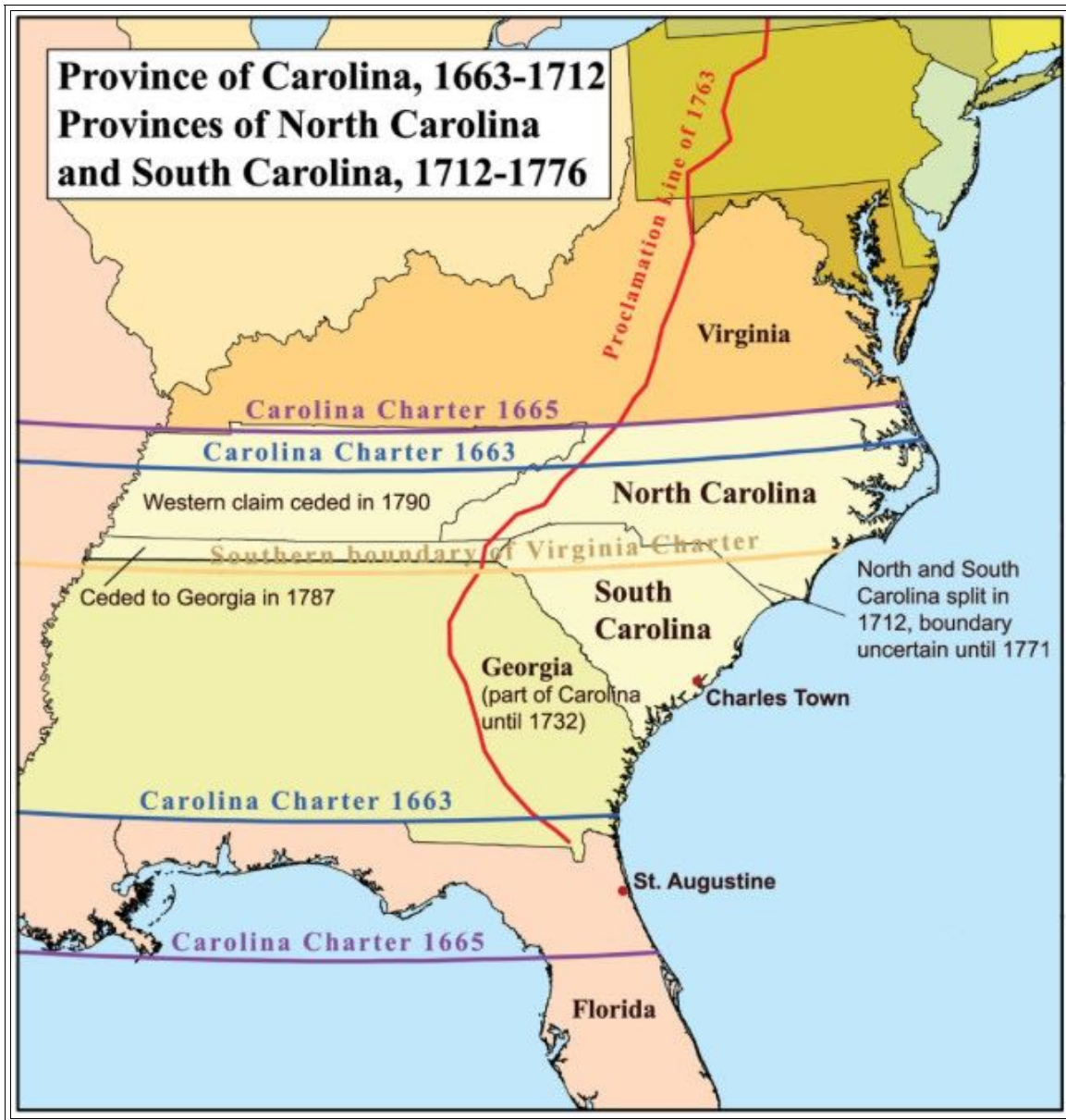
William Wells Gravestone

Old Burying Ground of First Presbyterian Church in Southold, New York
family search.com

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

North Carolina



http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Province_of_North_Carolina

[Click on Specific Ancestor for Biography](#)

NATHAN (NATHANIEL) BODDIE Ancestor of Margery Perry
 • Nathan Boddie Graveston

SAMUEL HENDERSON Ancestor of Lucile S. Thompson
 • Transylvania
 • Transylvania Purchase

ABRAHAM KUYKENDALL Ancestor of Eleanor Ellsworth

- **Gravestone of Abraham Kuykendall**
- **Revolutionary War Patriot**

MATTHEW LOCKE Ancestor of May Harvey

WILLIAM THOMAS Ancestor of Marilyn Nahas
• **Ancestor Register (ROA)**

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

NATHAN (NATHANIEL) BODDIE

NC

Ancestor of Margery Perry

Birth: Feb. 22, 1732, Isle of Wight County, Virginia

Nathan Boddie was a member of the Provincial Congress at Halifax Co., NC. A framer of the State Constitution in North Carolina. Member of Committee of Safety in 1774; in 1777 Member from Edgecombe, NC in the 1st., General Assembly (House of Commons). Member of the Senate from Nash County, NC, August 8, 1778 after the close of the war in 1781.

Son of William and Mary (Bennett) Boddie

Husband of Chloe (Crudup) Boddie ~ m. 1762

Their children were ...

- 1.) Bennett Boddie (m. Sarah Louse Smith)
- 2.) Elijah Boddie (m. Elizabeth Taylor)
- 3.) Temperance Boddie (m. Jeremiah Perry)
- 4.) George Boddie (m. 1st., Susannah Parham Hill and 2nd., Lucy Williams)
- 5.) Mary Boddie (m. Joshua Perry)
- 6.) Basheba Boddie
- 7.) Elizabeth Boddie (m. John Perry)
- 8.) Mourning Boddie (m. James Hilliard)

<http://www.westernkyhistory.org/christian/bio/boddie.html>

The Bobbie families were extremely prominent and wealthy of Virginia, North Carolina and Kentucky.

Death: Dec. 7, 1797, Nash County, North Carolina



Nathan Boddie Gravestone

Rose Hill Cemetery, Hunts, Nash County NC; Plot: Bodie

- <http://www.findagrave.com/cgi-bin/fg.cgi?page=gr&GRid=38885651>

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

SAMUEL HENDERSON

NC

Ancestor of Lucile S. Thompson

Samuel Henderson was born on 6 February 1746 in Granville County, North Carolina, the son of Samuel Henderson (1700-1784), sheriff and then judge in that county. His whole life, like those of his father and grandfather, was devoted to settling the states of Kentucky and Tennessee. The family's obsession began with Samuel's grandfather, Richard Henderson, who was the first Henderson to be born in the American colony. In 1763, Richard founded Richard Henderson & Company to settle the lands in a single proprietary colony that later became Kentucky and Tennessee. Recognizing that his settlers would not have the cash to buy their land and would probably need substantial initial support, he followed the English and Scottish system of granting long-term leases to recover his investment.

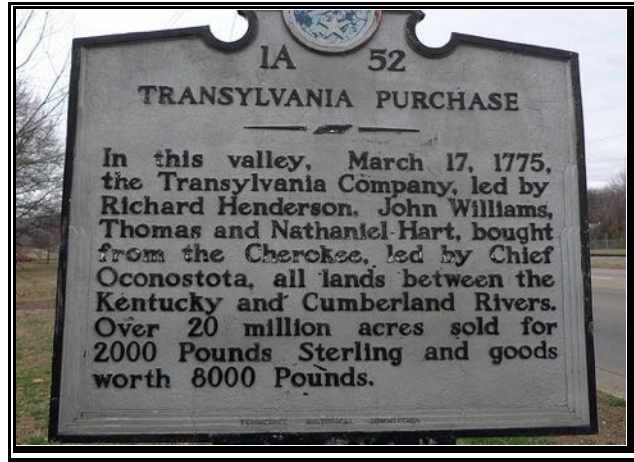
Daniel Boone was hired to select promising areas for settlement, to guide groups of settlers to those areas, and to help with their initial start. In August 1774, the company was reorganized as the Louisa Company and on 6 January 1775, it became the Transylvania Company with nine shareholders in addition to the Hendersons.



Transylvania

en.wikipedia.org

On 19 March 1775, the Transylvania Company signed the Treaty of Sycamore Shoals with the Cherokee Tribe, purchasing nearly all of the states of Kentucky and Tennessee as well as the northern parts of Alabama and Mississippi in return for trading goods valued at 10,000 pounds, a very considerable sum at that time.



Transylvania Purchase

washingtoncountyregiment.wordpress.com/500

Samuel, with the political connections necessary to become first a sheriff and then a judge, assumed control of the Transylvania Company. Samuel and his brother Richard began accompanying Boone on his trips to the various settlements and exploring territory to select sites for further towns. Rather naturally, as the settlements became more secure and less dependent on the Transylvania Company for manufactured goods, the settlers demanded title to their property. They emphasized the great increase in property value due to their labor and belittled the large expense of finding suitable locations and providing supplies. With merit on both sides of the argument, a compromise was reached in time for the Transylvania territory to apply for recognition as a fourteenth colony of the United States. Both Virginia and Tennessee opposed the application and it died.

In November 1770, the Virginia legislature voided the Transylvania Company land purchase but granted the company 200,000 acres in Kentucky in return for the funds and effort spent to develop the area. The North Carolina legislature followed this precedent, voiding the land purchase in return for a grant of 200,000 acres in Tennessee.

During his trips around the settlements, Samuel met Betsy (Elizabeth Frances) Callaway in Boonesboro, Kentucky. Samuel and Betsy were married there on 7 August 1776. After the end of the Revolutionary War, they moved to Winchester, Tennessee where Betsy died on 14 October 1815. Samuel died there in 1826.

The first white child born in Kentucky (1762), Betsy Callaway, was the daughter of Colonel Richard Callaway, a shareholder in the Transylvania Company. When about 12 years of age, Betsy was kidnapped by Indians from her home near Boonesboro. With the presence of mind expected in a frontier family member, she tore her handkerchief into pieces and dropped the pieces inconspicuously to lay a trail that the Boonesboro men could follow to rescue her.

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

ABRAHAM KUYKENDALL
NC
Ancestor of Eleanor Ellsworth

Abraham Kuykendall was born in October 1719 in Orange County, New York. He was the son of Matthew Kuykendall and Jannetje Westphal. He was baptized Oct. 18, 1719, in the Dutch Reformed Church in Deerpark, N.Y. Deerpark is located in Orange County, N.Y., near Port Jervis. Deerpark was part of a boundary dispute between New York and New Jersey that was not settled until 1874.

He married Elizabeth Fidler in Kingston, N.Y., in 1743. His Kuykendall family originally lived in the vicinity of Kingston in Ulster County, N.Y. Kingston is located along the Hudson River between New York City and Albany. His wife was Elizabeth Fidler, NOT Elizabeth Burleson as many researchers over the years have stated. The marriage document was found (since 2008) in the Dutch Reformed Church in Kinston, N.Y. It appears that Elizabeth Burleson of Rutherford County married a nephew of Abraham Kuykendall. His wife was born about 1728 in Kingston, N.Y. She died after 1800 in Buncombe County (Henderson County) and is presumed buried somewhere on the Kuykendall property in Flat Rock.

The North Carolina Chapter of the National Society Daughters of the American Revolution is named for Abraham Kuykendall, a Revolutionary War soldier and patriot.

Abraham moved into western North Carolina through the famous Cumberland Gap with his parents in 1719. He married his first wife, Elizabeth, about 1743 and fathered eleven children between 1755 and 1792.

Abraham Kuykendall is listed as a member of the North Carolina Militia in 1770 during the Revolutionary War. He was a member of the Safety Committee for Tryon County, North Carolina, from July, 26, 1775. Historical records show Abraham listed in Tryon County as Captain Kuykendall in July 1776.

Shortly after the Revolutionary War began, he was also appointed Commissioner of Tryon County, responsible for building a courthouse, prison, and stocks, and for establishing a boundary line between Tryon and Mecklenburg Counties. He also became Justice of the Peace of Tryon County in December of 1778, and continued in these roles when Rutherford County was formed during or after the Revolutionary War.

Abraham Kuykendall's life spans the colonial, revolutionary, and frontier eras of the United States. His story includes a legend of his ghost — a solitary figure of an old man in a one-horse wagon, said to haunt a creek called Pheasant Branch near Flat Rock. The legend says he is still searching for a pot of gold he buried there, and which he appears to have died trying to retrieve. Read the "Story and Legend" of Abraham Kuykendall, under the following link:

http://www.ncdar.org/AbrahamKuykendallChapter_files/html/story.html

He died in December 1812, in Buncombe County NC and is buried in the Mud Creek Baptist Church Cemetery, Flat Rock, Henderson County NC.



Gravestone of Abraham Kuykendall



- <http://hendersonheritage.com/abraham-kuykendall/>
- http://www.ncdar.org/AbrahamKuykendallChapter_files/index.html
- <http://www.findagrave.com/cgi-bin/fg.cgi?page=gr&GRid=92128581>

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

MATTHEW LOCKE
NC
Ancestor of May Harvey

Matthew Locke (1730 – September 7, 1801) was a U.S. Congressman from North Carolina between 1793 and 1799.

Locke was born to John Locke (b. 1700 in England - d. c.1744 in Lancaster PA) and his wife Elizabeth (b. c.1705 in England - d. 1760 in Rowan County, NC) in the north of Ireland, from where he migrated to settle in Rowan County, North Carolina. He was married to Mary Brandon (b. 1735) sometime around 1749.

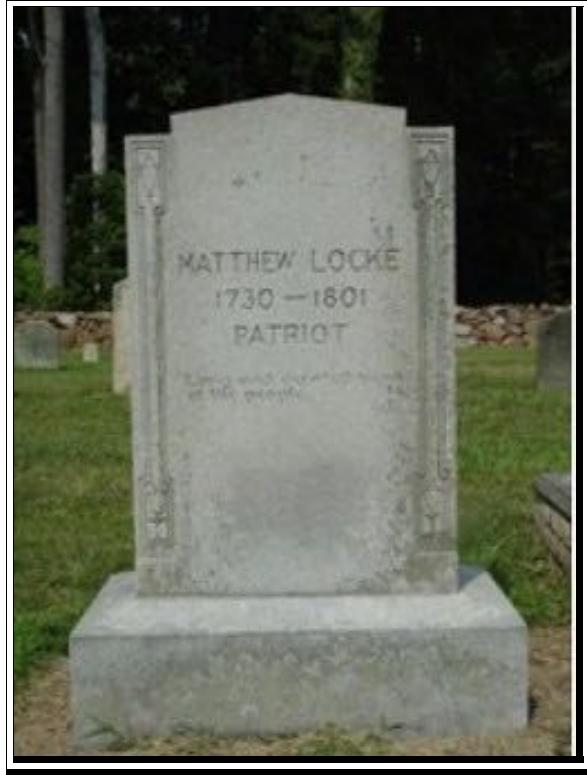
He was named treasury commissioner of the colony of North Carolina in 1771, and elected a member of the safety committee of Rowan County on August 8, 1774, and to the committee of secrecy, intelligence, and observation of Rowan County on September 23, 1774.

He was a delegate to the Provincial Congresses in Hillsborough, North Carolina and Johnston Court House in 1775, then as a member of the Colonial Congress at Halifax in 1776 and a delegate to the state Constitutional Convention of 1776.

The paymaster of troops in the Salisbury District in 1775, Locke was a brigadier general of North Carolina troops during the American Revolutionary War. He served several terms in the legislature, including periods in the North Carolina House of Commons from 1777 to 1781, the North Carolina Senate from 1781 to 1782, and in the House of Commons again from 1783 to 1792. Locke again was a delegate to the 1789 state Constitutional Convention called to consider ratification of the United States Constitution; he voted against ratification.

Affiliated with the United States Democratic-Republican Party, Locke was elected to the 3rd United States Congress in 1792 and served for three consecutive terms (March 4, 1793 - March 3, 1799). He married Philadelphia widow Elizabeth Towers Gostelowe in 1798,^[1] before being defeated for re-election.

After retiring from Congress, Locke was engaged as a planter and was an extensive landowner; he died in near Salisbury, North Carolina on September 7, 1801, aged 71 years, and is buried in the Thyatira Churchyard, near Salisbury.



Matthew Locke Gravestone

http://www.waymarking.com/waymarks/WMG95_General_Matthew_Locke

Locke was the uncle of North Carolina Senator Francis Locke and the great-great-great-grandfather of Arkansas Representative Effiegene Locke Wingo.

- [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Matthew_Locke_\(U.S._Congress\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Matthew_Locke_(U.S._Congress))

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

WILLIAM THOMAS

NC

Ancestor of Marilyn Nahas*

*deceased

Thomas, William c.1740-1800 Anson County, NC

1. Hannah (Pratt)

Member of Assembly 1774, 1775

Historical Sketches of NC- 1584-1851; Colonial Records of NC IX: 1033

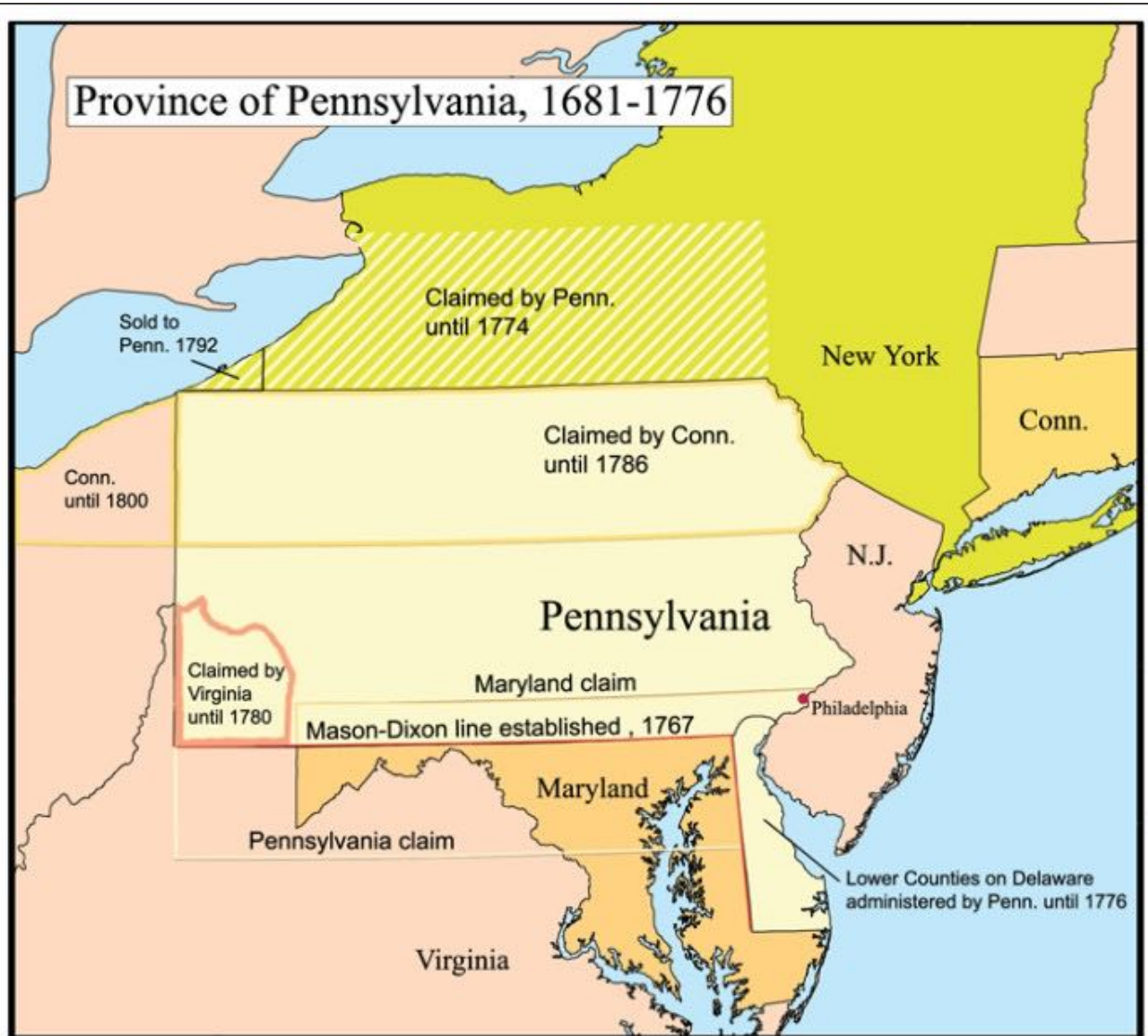
Ancestor Register (ROA)

NSCDA

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

Pennsylvania



http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Province_of_Pennsylvania

The **Province of Pennsylvania**, also known as the **Pennsylvania Colony**, was founded in [English North America](#) by [William Penn](#) on March 4, 1681 as dictated in a royal charter granted by [King Charles II](#). The name Pennsylvania, which translates roughly as,^[1] was created by combining the Penn surname (in honor of father, [Admiral Sir William Penn](#)) with the Latin word *sylvania*, meaning "forest land". The [proprietary colony](#)'s charter remained in the hands of the Penn family until the [American Revolution](#), when the Commonwealth of [Pennsylvania](#) was created and became one of the original thirteen colonies.

[Click on Specific Ancestor for Biography](#)

WILLIAM BASKIN JR Ancestor of Patricia Moulton

- Donegal, Ireland

WILLIAM BRINTON Ancestor of Virginia Martin

- NSCDA Ancestor Register (ROA)

- William Brinton 1704 House

HENRY COLESBURY Ancestor of Gay Grossman

- NSCDA Ancestor Register (ROA)
- * Lineage Index (IDDL)

THOMAS ELLIS Ancestor of Alison Ramey

- NSCDA Ancestor Register (ROA)
- * Lineage Index (IDDL)

THOMAS HILLBORN Ancestor of Mary Christine Daly, Virginia Patterson Waller, **Wendy Waller Daynes

- Edward Hicks' Residence of Thomas Hillborn

DANIEL HOOPES Ancestor of Ruth Farnsworth Barker Kerman

- Brooznoll

JACOB MORGAN Ancestor of Margaret Whittaker

- NSCDA Ancestor Register (ROA)

- * Lineage Index (IDDL)

GEORGE PEARCE Ancestor of Allyson Painter Kneib

JOHN SIMCOCK Ancestor of Grace Bentley Allen* and Barbara Elizabeth Bentley

THOMAS WYNNE MD Ancestor of Elizabeth Roby

- the ship *Welcome*

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

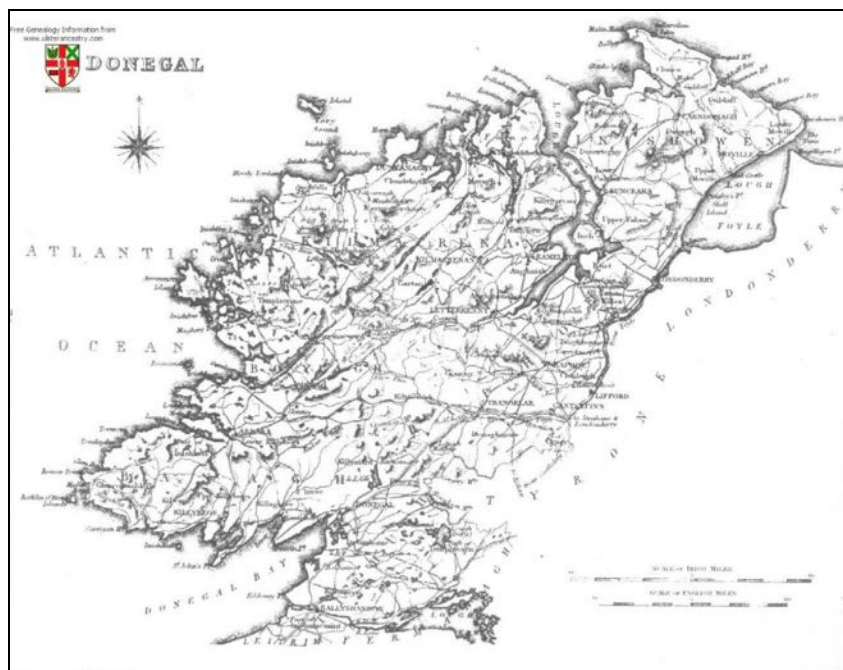
Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

WILLIAM BASKIN JR

PA

Ancestor of Patricia Moulton

William Baskin, Sr. (born about 1705 in Ireland, probably Donegal; died about. 1765 in Abbeville, SC) married Mary Stuart/Stewart (likely born about 1700 in Chester County, PA) in about 1730. William and Mary had eight children together.



Donegal, Ireland

William Baskin, Sr. was the first of our ancestors to come to America. At that time, we were still a loyal British colony on the outskirts of the known world. William and his family, being Scots-Irish, inhabited the edge of the colonies: the Pennsylvania frontier. Many Presbyterian immigrants from Northern Ireland, the Scots-Irish, settled here. They were considered outcasts on both sides of the Atlantic because of their religious beliefs and ancestry. As such, they tended to stick together in groups of like-minded people on the dangerous American frontier, which was the only place they were allowed to settle. As in Northern Ireland, they were generally poor, hard-working people with dreams of a better life in a new land. Some were successful. I would argue that William Baskin, Sr. was one.

William was born in Ireland, probably County Donegal (for there are still many Baskins there today) in approximately 1705. We cannot know what his life was like there, but we can assume it wasn't easy, and he longed for a change. So, in about 1730, William and his friend, John Pickens, came to the Pennsylvania colony in the New World, as had so many of their countrymen in the few years prior. William first settled in East Nottingham Township in Chester County and moved to the newly opened Paxton region a few years later. William may have been married before he came to Pennsylvania, but it seems more likely that he married there.

Little is known of William's wife, Mary Stuart/Stewart, but it seems she and William began having children shortly after William's arrival in Pennsylvania. Whether she was born in Ireland or the New World we may never know, but we can be sure her life wasn't easy. She must have shared William's religious beliefs, and she surely lived on the frontier with her growing family. William and Mary had eight children who lived to be recorded - 6 boys and 2 girls. Mary must have been pregnant and/or nursing for the better part of 14 years! First came John in 1731, then Thomas in 1733, Margaret in 1735, William, Jr. in 1735/36, James in 1739, Charles in 1740/41, Hugh in 1742/43, and finally Elizabeth in 1745. It appears Mary Stuart/Stewart Baskin would have been about 40-45 years old by the time she gave birth to Elizabeth. Imagine it: 45 years old, living on the American frontier with your husband and 8 young children. I think we can safely assume that Mary was a tough lady!

In the middle of all of this, about 1740, the Baskin and Pickens families moved again - this time to Orange County (later Augusta County), Virginia. There the family clearly joined the congregation of Rev. John Craig at the (Augusta) Stone Presbyterian Church. Rev. Craig, a prominent minister, baptized Charles Baskin on March 15, 1741. This would prove fateful for Charles, as he later married Rev. Craig's daughter, Mary.

Life seems to have improved for the Baskins after they moved to Virginia. In 1742 William's name appeared on the muster roll there. He apparently served as constable for the area until 1745 when he resigned. In 1747, 42 year old William became a road overseer and purchased 212 acres on Lewis Creek. In 1749 he purchased another 232 acres from John Pickens on Buffalo Run, and the family had a servant in 1752 and 1761. Clearly the Baskins were living the American dream of their time - they had joined the land-owning class. William and Mary must have been glad to have so many sons to help with work on the farm.

But work on the farm wasn't the only work available to a young man on the frontier. There were constant threats to the safety of the settlement from the native people of this land. When the Indians joined forces with the French to make war on the British colonies, young men were called to fight. Both William, Jr. (age 21) and John Baskin (age 25) were members of Captain Isreal Christian's company August 9, 1756. William, Jr. continued his service during the French and Indian Wars in Pennsylvania, and was stationed at Fort Ligonier in 1761 - 62.

All of this fighting opened up a new land on the South Carolina frontier new the current Georgia border, and in 1763, after the war concluded, John Baskin moved there and purchased land. He must have been doing well there, because soon he had convinced the whole family to join him - around 1765. William and Mary had already celebrated the marriage of their son, Thomas, to Margaret Hartgrove in 1759, and in 1765 the had more reason to celebrate. In that year Charles married the Rev. Craig's daughter, Mary, and John married Elizabeth, who may have been Mary's sister. But this happiness was short-lived as William, Sr. died that year, too.

II. William Baskin, Jr. (born abt. Feb. 14, 1735/36 in PA, died Apr. 9, 1804 in Abbeville, SC) married Ann Reid (born Dec. 25, 1747, daughter of George Reid) on Jan. 12, 1769 in Abbeville, SC.

William Baskin, Jr. was the third son in a large colonial family. As such, he would have known from a young age that he would have to make his own way in the world. His older brother, John, would have received most of any inheritance, and his many sisters would likely have required dowries upon their marriages. This would leave little cushion for William Jr. to count on for his future. Many "second sons" in well-to-do families at this time would be expected to join the military, and growing up on the frontier would certainly have encouraged this path as well. Young William and his family grew up in very dangerous areas of the colonial frontier, and fear of Indian attacks would be very real to them. Add to this the fact that the Baskins were Scotch-Irish, still outcasts among the English colonists, and it's no wonder William Jr. was a fighter - he had nothing to lose and everything to gain.

William was born on the Pennsylvania frontier about Feb. 14 1735/36. The family moved to newly opened lands in Orange County (later Augusta County), Virginia in 1740 with John Pickens' family and others where they were granted land to settle. This would have been more frontier land meant to be settled in order to provide a buffer between the colonists in the east of Virginia and the native population of that land. Obviously this would not have been an ideal situation to move into, but the Scotch-Irish had little choice if they wanted to own land. William Jr. undoubtedly learned to work the land and hunt during this time as the family grew. While growing up in Virginia, William's family attended Augusta (Stone) Presbyterian Church where the noted Rev. Craig led the congregation. For the Scotch-Irish and all Presbyterians at this time, the church was important in both spiritual and secular matters. Disputes between neighbors, cases of adultery, punishment for crimes were all handled by the elders of the church in these communities, not local government agents, for often there were none. The records of the church mention the Baskin family often as William Baskin, Sr. seems to have been very active in the church. William Jr. and his siblings must have grown up in a strict, harsh, hard-working community of survivors.

It is no surprise then that John and William both joined Captain Christian's company on Aug. 9, 1756 when war was declared on France and their Indian allies. Although too sickly to fight, their brother, Thomas, helped by collecting provisions for the militia as well. William seems to have really taken to military life as he continued his service at Fort Ligonier in 1761-62, and received 40 GBP (Great British

Pounds) on Dec. 11, 1766 from the Virginia House of Burgesses for meritorious service under Col Bouquet on the expedition against the Shawnee and Delaware Indians.

We can assume that young William returned home after the French and Indian War, and soon moved to Abbeville, SC with the rest of the family. There the family attended Rocky River Presbyterian Church, and there are still Baskins in the area today. John, James, Thomas's widow, Margaret, Charles and William, Jr. all took up land near each other in Abbeville County, but soon after the move, William Sr. died. A few years later, in 1767, John died, too, and Charles chose to return to Virginia. When rumblings of revolution began in New England, the Baskins were in South Carolina, one of the last colonies to join the war. The Baskin brothers, however, seem to have wanted this break from England, as William, Jr. and his younger brothers, James and Hugh, joined the fighting in 1777. At Charleston on April 18, 1777, William Jr. was commissioned Captain in the South Carolina Militia under Col. Andrew Williamson, and his brothers were a lieutenant and sergeant, respectively, in their brother's command. William Jr. was taken prisoner at the battle of Carr's Fort in 1779, and released after the Battle of Kettle Creek in Feb. 1779. He lost a horse at Sawty on November 15, 1781 on campaign against the Cherokee Nation under General Pickens. On this expedition, James was wounded, but lived to tell the tale.

By the time William returned home, the world was a different place. The Baskins now lived in the United States of America, which was a new country indebted to France for aid during the war and trying to create a new form of government. It was an unstable place to be, but the Baskins were used to instability from years of frontier living. Now it was time for Captain William Baskin, Jr. to return to his farm and make a life for himself and his own family. His wife, Ann, had made due while William was away fighting, and had been raising their growing brood. Sadly, two of their children died young - Margaret and George - but the others seemed to be well. When he came home from war, William seems to have become an authority figure in the community. He began to be called "Esquire" in records from the time, which means he was an attorney, which makes sense since he served as Justice of the Peace in Abbeville in 1785. In the first census of the United States in 1790, he is listed as "Captain William Baskin" and had in his household 3 free white males age 16 and up, 5 free white males under 16 years of age, 7 free white females, and 7 slaves. In 1796 he served as executor of his brother, Hugh's, estate; and in 1804, at about the age of 69, Captain William Baskin, Jr. finally died. His children and grandchildren would be the first generation of Baskins to grow up in the United States of America thanks to men like him who fought for that opportunity.

- <http://baskingenealogy.blogspot.com/2010/12/william-baskin-sr.html>

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

WILLIAM BRINTON
PA
Ancestor of Virginia Martin*

*deceased

Brinton, Joseph 1692-1751 Chester County,PA 1. Mary (Pierce) 2. Mrs. Mary Elgar Member, Assembly, 1729, 1731-1735 PA Archives, 2nd Series, IX: 689, 690.
Brinton, William 1670 - 1751 Chester County,PA 1. Jane (Thatcher) Member, Assembly, 1713 PA Archives, 2nd Series, IX: 704

Ancestor Register (ROA)
NSCDA.org

William Brinton

Also Known As:	"William the elder"
Birthdate:	December 1, 1636
Birthplace:	Nether Gournal, Sedgeley, Stratford, England
Death:	Died October 29, 1700 in Birmingham, Chester, Pennsylvania
Place of Burial:	Will Proved: Dec, Philadelphia, Pennsylvania
Immediate Family:	Son of Thomas Brinton III and Ann Biddle Husband of Ann Bagley Brinton Father of Ann Bennett ; Edward Brinton ; Elizabeth Harry (Brinton) ; William Brinton, II and Esther Willis Brother of Stephen Brinton ; Thomas Brinton and Anna Brinton

- <http://www.geni.com/people/William-Brinton/385313119460003829>



William Brinton 1704 House
<http://www.brintonfamily.org>

The William Brinton 1704 House, situated on a 450 acre land grant from William Penn, has been restored by the Brinton family to its original state. Built by William Brinton Jr. "Brinton the Younger" in 1704, the house was designated a National Historic Landmark in 1968. Furnished with period furniture, the house has leaded casement windows, an indoor bake oven and a colonial herb garden in the back yard. The house is maintained by the Brinton Association of America and the caretaker is a sixth generation Brinton. Famous Brinton descendants include Civil War General George B. McClellan and President Richard M. Nixon.

– The Brandwine.com

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

HENRY COLESBURY
PA
Ancestor of Gay Grossman

IDDL Common Ancestor / Descendant Report

[Back to Search Result](#)

Colesbury, Henry

1702-1760 New Castle County DE

Claimant ID # 3574C (Approved:12/10/1993)

SPOUSE: __, Elizabeth GSS b. 1709 in d.12 September, 1771 in

MARRIED: in

OTHER INFO:

REFERENCES:

Service: Lieutenant 1747-1748. Proof of this service: Pennsylvania if Archives, 2nd Series, Vol. II, p. 513 (ED. 1876).

1. Ferris, Original Settlers of Delaware (1846), pgs. 188, 189.
2. Runk's Biographical and Genealogical History of Delaware (1899), page 270.

Lineage Index (IDDL)

Birth: unknown
Death: 1760

aged fifty-eight years.

Burial:
[Old Swedes Churchyard](#)
Wilmington
New Castle County
Delaware, USA

-
- [http://www.findagrave.com/cgi-bin/fg.cgi?](http://www.findagrave.com/cgi-bin/fg.cgi?page=gr&GSIn=Colesbury&GSbyrel=in&GSdyrel=in&GSob=n&GRid=15570472&)
page=gr&GSIn=Colesbury&GSbyrel=in&GSdyrel=in&GSob=n&GRid=15570472&
-

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

THOMAS ELLIS

PA

Ancestor of Alison Ramey

Ellis, Thomas ____-1688 Haverford, PA

1. ____, 2. Ellen Rees

Register General, 1687

Colonial Records, I: 165

Ancestor Register (ROA)

NSCDA

Ellis, Thomas

____-1688 Haverford PA

Claimant ID # 3558C (Approved:12/6/2005)

SPOUSE: Unknown b. in Wales d. in Wales

MARRIED: in Wales

OTHER INFO:

REFERENCES:

Service: Register Journal of the Providence of Pennsylvania 168 7(July 28). Proof of the service: Pennsylvania Archives , Series 2, Vol. IX, page 645 (1896 ed).

1. Coll. GSPa: Cope Coll. Gen. Co. 27 "Elliss" pgs. 45, 47, Phs 14.2A p. 14, Phil. Will Abstracts, Administration Book A. p. 10 .
2. The Friend Vol. 27, pg. 179, 188.
3. Gen. Soc., PA Publications Vol. IV, p. 285.
4. History of Dela Co, PA., (George Smiths:1862), p. 458.
5. Loose pages from fileds in Chester Co ., Hist. Society "Ellis", marked Herbert P. Worth Estate (Memorial on death of Thos. Ellis)

Claimant ID # 8196M (Approved:9 May 2016)

SPOUSE: Unknown b. in Wales d. in Wales

MARRIED: in Wales

OTHER INFO:

REFERENCES:

Service: Register General of the Province of Pennsylvania 28 7mo 1687. Proof of this service: Minutes of the Provincial Council of Pennsylvania, Vol. I, p. 211.

1. For proof of the following references see IDDL #3558C.
2. Coll. GSPa: Cope Coll. Gen Co.27 "Elliss" pages 45, 47,Phs 14.2A page 14 Phil. Will Abstracts, Administration Book A.P. 10.
3. Gen. Soc. PA Publications Volume IV, page 285.
4. History of Delaware County, PA, (George Smiths: 1862), page 485.
5. Loose pages from files in Chester County Historical Society "Ellis", Marked Herbert P. Worth Estate (Memorial On death of Thomas Ellis).
6. Other: Liberty Land Philadelphia Pennsylvania Company

Lineage Index (IDDL)

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

THOMAS HILLBORN

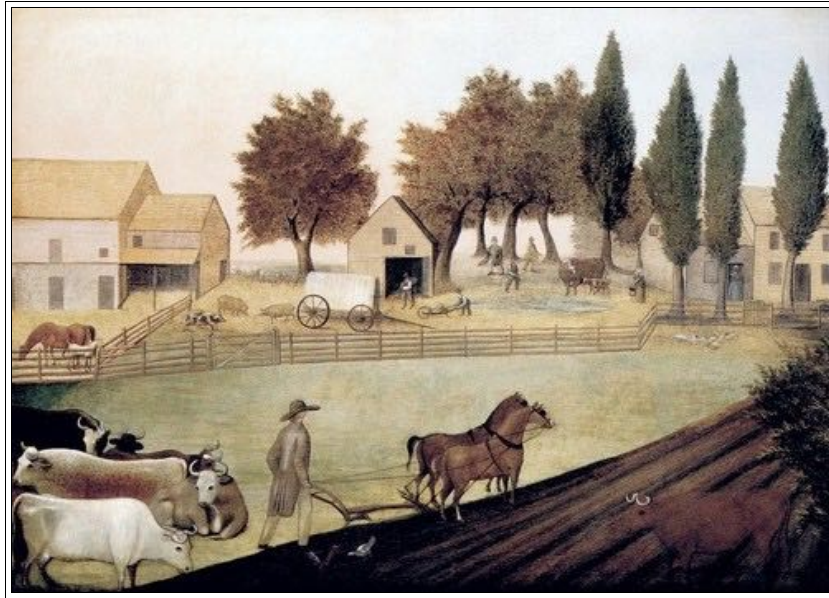
PA

Ancestor of Mary Christine Daly, Virginia Patterson Waller, **Wendy Waller Daynes

Thomas Hillborn was baptized 17 December 1655 at St. Mary's Church, North Petherton, Somerset, England. He was the son of Robert and Mary (Hayes) Hillborn. In 1670 when he was about 15 years of age he left home for Bristol where he signed on with Christopher Holder, a Quaker. They sailed for Newport, Rhode Island. After a few years he left Newport for Shrewsbury, New Jersey where he bought land. On 12 December 1688 Thomas Hillborn married Elizabeth Hooton, the granddaughter of the noted Quaker, Elizabeth Carrier Hooton (1600-1672).

While the Hillborn family lived in Shrewsbury six children were born. About 1702 the Hillborns moved to Newtown, Bucks County, Pennsylvania where they had a farm of 1,000 acres and six more children were born. Thomas Hillborn was elected for four terms from Bucks County to the Pennsylvania Assembly (1706-1709). At the time of his death in 1723 he still owned a property of 440 acres in Great Egg Harbor, New Jersey besides the property in Bucks County.

There is an oil painting by Edward Hicks entitled "Residence of Thomas Hillborn" in the Abby Aldrich Rockefeller Folk Art Center in Williamsburg, Virginia. It was painted about 1845 long after Thomas died. The property stayed in the family until 1821 and was bought back in 1846 by a descendant.



Edward Hicks' Residence of Thomas Hillborn

Abby Aldrich Rockefeller Folk Art Center, Williamsburg VA

Elizabeth Carrier Hooton (1600-1672) was a most interesting woman. She was literate at a time when most women were not. Much of her correspondence survives and is located at the Swarthmore College Library and The Friends' Library in London, England. Elizabeth Carrier Hooton had at least two audiences with King Charles II remonstrating him for his wicked ways and long before it became the thing to do, campaigned for prison reform. She was known as the first woman Quaker preacher and came to the Colonies several times.

**Retains status as a non-resident member of The National Society of the Colonial Dames of America in California.

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

DANIEL HOOPES

PA

Ancestor of Ruth Farnsworth Barker Kerman

To escape possible persecution as Quakers, Joshua and Isabel Hoopes sailed from England in 1683 aboard the *Providence* bound for the colony that William Penn had established in America. With them was their son Daniel (who had been baptized in Yorkshire on 27 May 1672) and daughters, Margaret and Christian.

After living for a while in Bucks County, Daniel Hoopes moved to Westtown, Chester County, Pennsylvania to 500 acres of prime land; a parcel that he and his father had been granted by William Penn.

On 10 December 1696, Daniel Hoopes married Jane WorriLOW at the home of John Bowater in Middletown Township. During the years 1708 and 1709, Daniel served as an elected member of the Chester County Assembly. He was also the first Justice of the Peace of Westtown, Chester County.

Over the course of the years Daniel and Jane had 17 children, creating over time what has been described as one of the largest, if not the largest family in Pennsylvania, numbering some 20,000 in 1930. All of Daniel and Jane's children died within 20 miles of the family homestead, but their progeny are said to be represented in virtually all of the United States and parts of Canada.

The family farmed the acreage in Chester County, most likely living in tents and log houses as they quarried local gray-green fieldstone in blocks ten by three inches in size for a fine house they built in 1723. This home was named "Brooznoll" (Windy Knoll) after the WorriLOW homestead in England. For over 200 years the property remained in the Hoopes family. The house has had several owners since then. It has seen many changes and additions, but still retains the inlaid stone plaque under the eaves with Daniel Hoopes' initials and dates. "Brooznoll" is located on Street Road in Westtown, Chester County, Pennsylvania on Route 926 east of Route 352.



Brooznoll

Hoopes family homestead near Westtown, Chester Co., Pennsylvania

<http://familytreemaker.genealogy.com/users/h/o/o/John-Hoopes-/PHOTO/0002photo.html>

Daniel Hoopes died 29 1746.

Reference:

The Hoopes Ramily Record, Volume I, the First Six Generations.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

JACOB MORGAN
PA
Ancestor of Margaret Whittaker

Morgan, Jacob 1716-1792 Berks County, PA
1. Rachel (Piersol)
Member, Provincial Conference, 1776
PA Archives, 2nd Series, III: 558

Register of Ancestors (ROA)

Morgan, Jacob

1716-1792 Berks County PA

Claimant ID # 2017C (Approved:9-Sep-93)

SPOUSE: Piersol, Rachel b. 1723 in d.19 Dec. 1791 in buried Morgantown, PA

MARRIED: in

OTHER INFO:

REFERENCES:

Service: Justice of th Peace Comm. 1764, 1769, 1770, 1773. Member of the Provincial Conference 18 June 1776. Captain at Fort Lebanon 1754. Proof of this service: PA Archives 2nd Series Vol. IX, pp. 785, 786, 787, (1880 ed.). PA Archives, 2nd Series, Vol. III p. 636 (1896 ed). American Archives 4th Ser. Vol. VI, p. 95. PA Archives 5th Ser. Vol. I p. 30.

1. Publications, Gen. Soc., PA. Vol. IXp. 48.
2. Pennsylvania Families, Vol. 39, p. 186.
3. Collections Gen.Soc. PA. LA 136: Leach Collections p. 65, subpages 1, 3, - BE 12A, Berks Co. gravestone inscriptions: St. thomas Prot. Epis Church Burials, p. 3 (JP, RP) - Be4A:1, Berks Co., Will Abstracts, p. 497 (1992 will of JM mentions entitlement to land for service as Capt. in Provincial service)

Claimant ID # 2454C (Approved:3/19/1990)

SPOUSE: Piersol, Rachel b. 1723 in d.1791 in

MARRIED: 1747 in

OTHER INFO:

REFERENCES:

Service: Justice of Peace, Berks Co., PA. 1768, 1769, 1772. Captain in French and Indian Wars, Provincial Forces of Penna. 1759-1765. Captain at Fort Lebanon 1754, Capt., 2nd Battalion Penna. Regiment 1758. Founded Morgantown, later General of Penna., Militia. Proof of this service: Decimal Number of Penn Register of the Sons of the Revolution p.98, PA Archives-2 Vol. 1, p. 785. Colonial Records 1764-1773. Egles' History of Penna. PA Archives 2, Vol. 3. Penna Archives series S, Vol. 5, pp. 4, 5,7,, 125, 162, 250, 252, 270. PA magazine of Hist. & Biog. Vol. 4, p. 98. "Old Phila Families" F.W. Leach, Vol. 4, p. 158. "Colonial Families of Phila, Jordon, Vol. II.

1. Colonial Families of Philadelphia, Vol. II p. 995, (Jordon)

Lineage Index (IDDL)

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

GEORGE PEARCE
PA
Ancestor of Allyson Painter Kneib*

*deceased

George Pearce was twenty years old, born in 1659, when he married Ann Gayner on 1 February 1679 at Olveston, England. Her father was William Gayner, a blacksmith, her mother was Ann Jones, and both were ardent Quakers.

They had three children, Betty, George and Joshua. Some five years after their marriage they met William Penn. He was gathering groups of Quakers to go to the new world. He had been given land by King Charles II in lieu of money for beating the Dutch. The Pearces were given a grant for 490 acres. The land was pictured as rich and beautiful. They set sail on the *Bristol Merchant* in 1682. Twenty-three vessels came to Upland, later called Chester County, in Pennsylvania.

The first year they built a log cabin in Thornbury Township, named in honor of Ann, who had been born in Thornbury, England. At that time only a few families lived there. George was labeled as a yeoman and then as a turner. He was an ambitious young man and in 1706 he was elected to the Chester County Provincial Assembly. He was much concerned with roads and building, and then started the first mill in the district. The historic section of Thornbury still displays the enormous water wheel and old bam. There is in the county a store, post office, and two streets of historic significance that George had constructed. Thornbury became known for its beauty.

Ann gave birth to five more children- Caleb, Gaines, Ann, Margaret, and Mary. She grew ill and died in 1725 in Thornbury. Two of her children died at young ages.

George remarried the widow of Nicholas Pyle, also named Ann. They had two children, Hannah and John. With the second generation the spelling of Pearce was changed to Peirce.

George Pearce built a beautiful home with his son Joshua Pierce at Kenneth Square on 402 acres on the Brandywine River. He developed the land with his children and grandchildren into beautiful displays of living plants. Today, it is a private museum, Peirce Park and Longwood Gardens. There are over 1000 acres of woods, meadows and gardens now in the safe keeping of the Longwood Foundation, owned by the Du Ponts. It is the best known botanical garden in the Eastern United States.

George Pearce died in 1734 in East Marlborough where he had moved. His three sons were given the mill. To his wife and daughters he gave money, and the remaining estate which included a school house was willed to the town of Thornbury.

Half of the Peirce family remained Quakers and the other half went to Utah and became Mormons.

Family tradition has it that George Pearce descended from the Percys of Alnwick Castle, Northumberland, the family of Shakespeare's "Hotspur," depicted in *Henry IV*. The main character is Percy who became Hotspur. He was killed by the Prince of Wales. There is a quotation, "Let me warn the inveterate ancesterate worshippers at the onset, that for every family hero who struts these pages, there is a traitor or knave lurking in the binding."

References:

Futhey, J. Smith and Gilbert Cope. History of Chester County, Pennsylvania. Philadelphia: Louis H. Everts. 1881.

Peirce, Carl Harvey. Robert and Hannah Harvey Peirce, 1847 Utah Pioneers. Self published, 2003.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

JOHN SIMCOCK

PA

Ancestor of Grace Bentley Allen* and Barbara Elizabeth Bentley

John Simcock was born about 1630 in England and died in 1702 in Chester County, Pennsylvania. William Penn, having been granted what was to become the Province of Pennsylvania by Charles II, in April 1681 became the first Governor of the Province. In March 1682 Penn, by deeds of lease, granted a large tract of land to nine men, including John Simcock. This trust was for "The Society of Traders" and the first meeting was in London in May 1682. John Simcock was elected deputy President. The Society made preparations for the selling of lands and commenced the work of founding the Province. Indian lands were also purchased.

John Simcock was active thereafter as Provincial Councilor from 1682-1700. The first election ever held by freemen in Pennsylvania was held in Chester County on 6 December 1683 to elect "seven persons of most note for wisdom, sobriety and integrity to serve in the General Assembly." John Simcock was one of seven elected. At this time there were about 7,000 people in the Province of whom 2,500 lived in the Philadelphia area.

The Provincial Council form of government prevailed from 10 March 1682/3 to 9 December 1775. William Penn issued a commission to five persons and gave them executive power and John Simcock was one of the five. In 1690 he was elected Speaker of the Assembly.

William Penn's entourage encompassed 23 ships. He said, "Blessed by the Lord, that of 23 ships none miscarried...Some had but 28 days and few longer than 6 weeks." They all left England and arrived in the Province in 1681 and 1682. John Simcock came over on the *Friendship* of Liverpool the 8th vessel. His two sons, John and Jacob, are listed on the ship's registry. The ship arrived 14 August 1682. John, Sr. had a Free Patent of 2,875 acres.

John Simcock's wife was Elizabeth Budd, also of England. Their daughter Hannah Simcock, born in 1660 in England, married John Kinsman (born in Eifel, Wilts, England) on 15 November 1684 in Chester County, Pennsylvania. Both John Simcock and his wife, Elizabeth, died in Chester County in 1702.

**deceased*

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

THOMAS WYNNE MD
PA
Ancestor of Elizabeth Roby

Dr. Thomas Wynne (July 20, 1627 – March 17, 1691) was personal physician of William Penn and one of the original settlers of Philadelphia in the Province of Pennsylvania. Born in Ysceifiog, Wales, where his family dated back seventeen generations to Owain Gwynedd He accompanied Penn on his original journey to America on the ship *Welcome*.



the ship *Welcome*
www.fishtownonline.com

Early life and education

According to church records, Thomas Wynne was the fourth of five sons of Thomas Wynne Sr., Thomas Wynne lost his father at the age of 11. While attracted to the study of medicine early on, heavy taxes levied on his family originally made the acquisition of proper learning materials difficult. His trade was that of cooper. He was later able to make the acquaintance of an established surgeon by the name of Richard Moore, and soon he was able to apprentice until he was deemed worthy of licensing. He was licensed in Shropshire by Drs. Hollins, Needham and Moore. He in turn after the death of Dr. Richard Moore apprenticed his son Mordecai Moore.

Emigration to Pennsylvania

Born into the Protestant faith, he in 1655 married Quaker Martha Buttall (1627–1676) and found himself profoundly converted. Henceforth a devout Quaker and author of several pamphlets on Quaker doctrine, Wynne faced persecution and even six years' imprisonment in England in the 1680s. After Martha died, he married Mrs. Elizabeth Rowden (b. 1637; d. after 1691) on July 20, 1676, and she accompanied him as he joined Penn on his trip to America, leaving on August 30 and landing on October 27, 1682.

Career

Wynne was notable for erecting the first brick house in the colony of Philadelphia, on his "Liberty Lot" at Front and Chestnut streets (known as Wynne Street until renamed by Penn in 1684). He built a home at 52nd Street and Woodbine Avenue in 1690 named "Wynnestay" (a reference to the famous Wynnstay estate in Wales owned by Sir John Wynn, 1st Baronet, a collateral cousin, and several surrounding communities in the greater Philadelphia Area now bear his name. He served as speaker for the first two

Pennsylvania Assemblies of the Province in Philadelphia in 1687 and 1688 and acted as Justice of Sussex county, now a county in Delaware, from 1687 to 1691.^[7] He returned to England with Penn in 1684. He was appointed a justice of the peace in January 1690 and held the position of justice of the provincial court from September 1690 until his death. His time in America lasted only nine years. He is buried at the Friends burial ground, called Duckett's Farm which occupied the current site of 30th Street Station Philadelphia and was affiliated with the Arch Street Friends Meeting House in Philadelphia.

Family

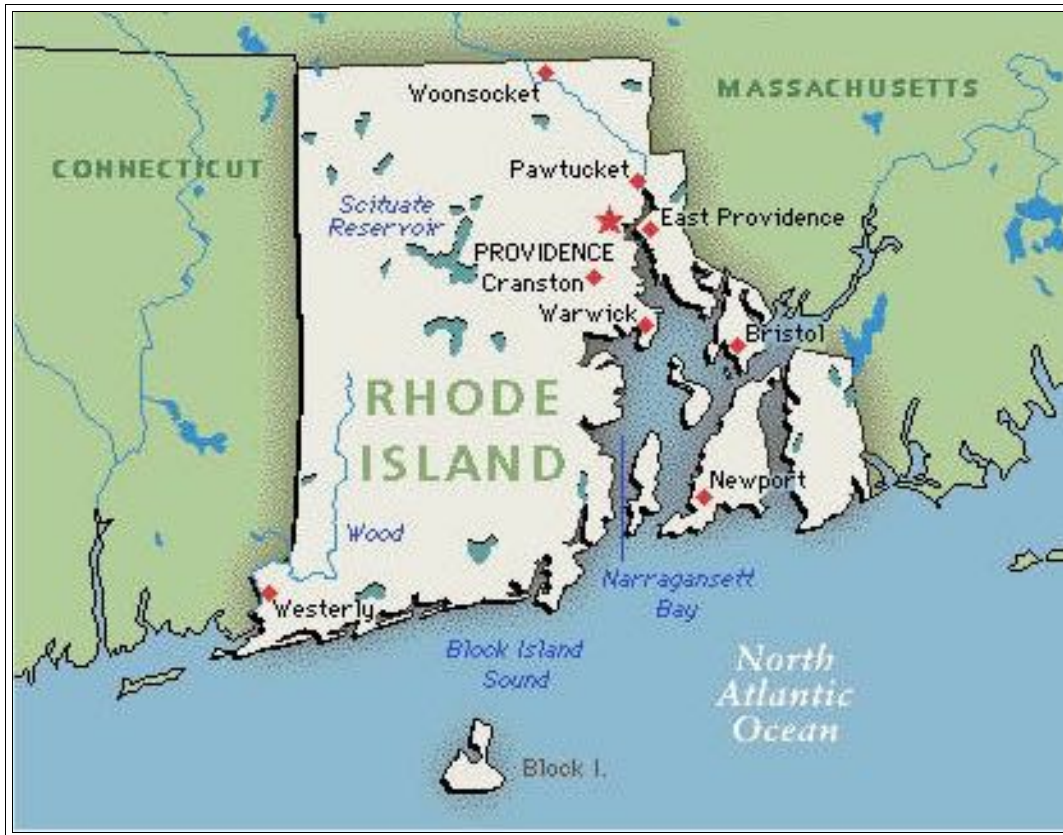
Among his descendents are John Dickinson and John Cadwalader and Sally Wister through his daughter Mary wife of Dr. Edward Jones; Charles Dickinson, through his daughter Rebecca; Joshua Humphreys and Charles Humphreys, through his daughter Hannah; Joshua Fisher, through his stepdaughter Margery Maude; great-grandsons Thomas, Thomas, and Warner Wynne, through his son Jonathan, who served in the Pennsylvania "Flying Camp" and were taken prisoner by the British at the Battle of Fort Washington and held on the prison ships in New York Harbor. Gustavus Wynne Cook through his son Jonathan and his grandson Thomas. This Thomas is remembered on the Lower Merion Revolutionary War Memorial.

- http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Thomas_Wynne

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

Rhode Island



<http://barbsnow.net/RhodeIsland.htm>

The **Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations** was one of the original [English Thirteen Colonies](#) established on the east coast of North America. After the [American Revolution](#), it became the [U.S. state of Rhode Island](#).

The land that became the English Colony was first home to the [Narragansett Indians](#), as well as some other American Indian tribes such as the Nipmuc. European contact began by the [Dutch](#), and was initially claimed by the [Colony of New Netherlands](#). English settlement along the [Massachusetts Bay](#) and [Plymouth Colony](#). Once the English claimed the area of New England, Dutch influence was particularly withdrawn from the area, though still remained after that; arguably through the name Roode Eysland, which was later anglicized to Rhode Island..

[Click on Specific Ancestor for Biography](#)

ANTHONY AUSTIN Ancestor of Anne Claude Howard Thomas

ANDREW EDMUNDS Ancestor of Aline G. Hornaday

JOHN GREENE Ancestor of Jane Parker

THOMAS HARRIS Ancestor of Hope Wagstaff

- **Harris lot in Providence overlaid on contemporary map**
- **Harris became a slave in Algiers along the Barbary Coast.**

RANDALL HOLDEN Ancestor of Susan Keith

JOSEPH JENCKES Ancestor of Joan Stone and Connie Stone

- **Portrait of Governor Joseph Jenckes**

JOHN RATHBONE Ancestor of Marion Emerson

JOHN WAITE Ancestor of Margaret Phillips Rinehart Christman

SAMUEL WILBORE Ancestor of Virginia Thomas McRoberts and Ethel Thomas Sanford

ROGER WILLIAMS Ancestor of Elisabeth Kenny Ecker

- **Roger Williams**
- **Providence Plantation**
- **Williams Root**

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

ANTHONY AUSTIN

RI

Ancestor of Anne Claude Howard Thomas

Anthony Austin is actually the ancestor of three California Colonial Dames, myself and two daughters. Because of the wealth of information in another family line however, that of Samuel Wilbore from Rhode Island, my daughters Ethel Thomas Sanford and Virginia Thomas McRoberts joined the Colonial Dames through that relation (Samuel Wilbore).

My Colonial Dames ancestor, Anthony Austin, was born about 1636 in Bishopstock, Hampshire County, England. His parents were Richard Austin and Elizabeth. Anthony married Esther Huggins. She was the daughter of John Huggins and Bridget Green, and it is known that she was born in Hapton, New Hampshire. Their wedding day was 19 October 1664. Following are the names of their children: Richard, Anthony, John, Nathanie Elizabeth (1), Elizabeth (2), and Esther.

It is probable that Anthony immigrated with his parents, his aunt, her children and an older brother Richard aboard the *IkYis*. They sailed from Southampton and landed at Boston. The family settled in Charlestown, Massachusetts, and sadly, Anthony's father died soon after arriving in the colonies.

Records show that Anthony Austin was made a freeman in 1669. He was also an original proprietor of Suffield, Connecticut, being granted 50 acres along Feather Street on 17 July 1674. In May of 1678 it is known that he served as sergeant of a foot company at Suffield (noted in Major Pynchon's account book). On 12 October 1681 he was promoted to Lieutenant, being the first officer to command the foot company in Suffield. He and his company were engaged in many Indian battles.

Anthony Austin died in Suffield County on 22 August 1708. His wife, who was six years younger than he was, predeceased him.

Curiously, although Samuel Wilbore and Anthony Austin were not related, it is known that Samuel Wilbore's great-great grandson Simeon Hathaway married Deborah Austin, who was Anthony Austin's granddaughter. So Samuel and Anthony shared some descendants further up the family tree.

References:

Headstone Inscriptions: Town of Suffield, Connecticut. Ken Memorial Library: Suffield CT.
Suffield County Vital Records. Hartford: Connecticut State Library.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

ANDREW EDMUNDS

RI

Ancestor of Aline G. Hornaday

The first certain colonial record of Andrew Edmunds is his appointment in 1675 as Captain of the Providence Special Company Train Band. However, it is possible that he was the same man as the Andrew Edmunds who was in Boston in 1674. The Andrew Edmunds in Boston had come via Holland, where so many colonial soldiers of fortune had their military training. It is plausible that he may have been the Andrew Edmunds who was appointed Rhode Island captain of militia the next year. Edmunds was born about 1639.

When King Philip's War broke out on 24 June 1676, Rhode Island authorities put Edmunds in command of a miniature expeditionary force. It included Providence, Swansea and Rehoboth men, as well as a Connecticut unit and 50 Mohegan Indians, 147 men and officers in all. This force chased Philip into the Pocasset swamp. But before Edmunds and his men could advance into the swamp, Captain Hinchman and his Massachusetts force marched up. Hinchman, Edmunds' senior in the combined force, took charge. He delayed the attack on Pocasset until the next day, giving Philip *his* chance to escape and to set New England literally on fire (with the help of the Dutch colony at Albany).

Edmunds evidently returned to Providence, where he married Mary Hearnden on 14 October 1675. On 27 March 1676, Indians concentrated a large force on Pawtuxet. The local Captain Pierce urgently sent for Edmunds to take over its defense. But the messenger, more pious than intelligent, scrupled to call Edmunds out of church. When Edmunds finally emerged, the messenger showed him the letter. Edmunds "struck his hands together and exclaimed 'Then I am now too late!'" Though he marched at once for Pawtuxet, Pierce and his troops had already been massacred. Worse yet, the Pawtuxet attack had been a feint designed to draw Edmunds and his men away from Rehoboth. Fifteen hundred Indians burned Rehoboth on March 28, then overran and burned Providence the next night. The war only ended on 12 August 1676, with Philip's capture by Captain Benjamin Church of Boston in the same Pocasset swamp where he had earlier escaped from Edmunds.

After the war, Providence granted Edmunds the Seekonk Ferry franchise and "four barren acres" of land in return for his services. Later this land was traded for a better nine-acre parcel next to the ferry. Only King William's War rescued Edmunds from a tedious life as a ferryman, small farmer, and hunter of wolves for bounty. He joined Boston troops under Captain Church in 1689 with a Rhode Island force. The Rhode Island Assembly and the Plymouth Colony General Court later awarded him suitable pay for his service in this war. In 1690 he served under Captain Thomas Paine in the Rhode Island expedition against Block Island. The town of Providence came to poor Mary Edmunds' rescue with a stipend of 6 pounds while he was away. In 1693 he was gone again in the Massachusetts Bay Colony's expedition to Canada, and Mary again had to petition for support. Edmunds died on 22 July 1695.

Reference:

Drake, Samuel, ed. Thomas Church. The History of the Great Indian War.etc. Hartford: 1851.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

JOHN GREENE

RI

Ancestor of Jane Parker

Major John Greene was one of the most powerful and important figures in the early history of Rhode Island.

Major Greene was the son of surgeon John Greene and Joanne Tatersall. His wife was Ann Almy. Oliver Payson Fuller, in his 1875 "History of Warwick", notes that Major John Greene held at different times the offices of General Recorder, General Attorney, General Solicitor but was best known for his service as Deputy Governor. He was elected annually to that office from 1690-1700. He finally retired at the age of eighty. He received no salary for his services but was exempted from payment of taxes. He wielded more power than the Governors he served with and left a greater impact on the state's history than almost any early politician.

During his tenure the town of Warwick was nearly destroyed by a smallpox epidemic in 1690. The town also witnessed the introduction of paper money as bills of credit. In 1692, Greene journeyed to Boston to inquire about establishing a post office and he helped to bring about the development of the Boston Post Road, which ran from Boston through Apponaug and eventually to Virginia.

Major Greene was one of the 24 named in the permanent charter obtained from King Charles II in 1663, and one of the 10 assistants provided for in the Charter for Rhode Island. He was one of those commissioned to determine the boundary lines of the colony with the colonies of Connecticut, and Massachusetts. He is also regarded as a champion for Rhode Island rights and is noted significantly as the man who introduced Rhode Island to the controversial practice of privateering. It paved the way for a dramatic increase in Rhode Island's commerce.

Major John Greene and Ann Almy Greene had eleven children. Their youngest, Samuel, married Mary Gorton, whose grandfather founded Warwick. Samuel was very important in Apponaug history and his descendants continued to be important in the history of Warwick and Rhode Island.

- <http://nscda.org/historical-activities/ancestor-biographies/#bio-B>

-

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

THOMAS HARRIS
RI
Ancestor of Hope Wagstaff

William Harris (1610-1681) was one of the four men who was with Roger Williams at Seekonk in the Plymouth Colony during the winter early in 1636. He then joined Williams and several families in establishing the settlement of Providence which later became a part of the Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations. He became one of the 12 original proprietors of Providence, and one of the 12 original members of the first Baptist Church in America, and appears prominently in the early records of the settlement.

Harris had a very keen mind for business, and while Roger Williams was a dreamer, Harris was a realist who knew legal methods and principles better than any other man in Providence. He had very liberal views concerning the freedom of conscience, and published these views. This put him in deep conflict with Williams, who as President of the colony in 1657 issued a warrant for Harris's arrest with the charge of high treason against the Commonwealth of England. At the ensuing trial, the court decided that the matter must be sent to England for resolution, with Harris being placed under bond. Ultimately, the ruling was in Harris' favor.

Harris was very active in town and colonial affairs from 1660 to 1676, while at the same time acting as agent or representative for interests that were inimical to the interests of the colony. He became an agent on behalf of the Pawtuxet settlers in some complex land disputes, and made several trips to England on their behalf. While he was successful in winning his cases, the results were never realized, and disputes continued following his death.

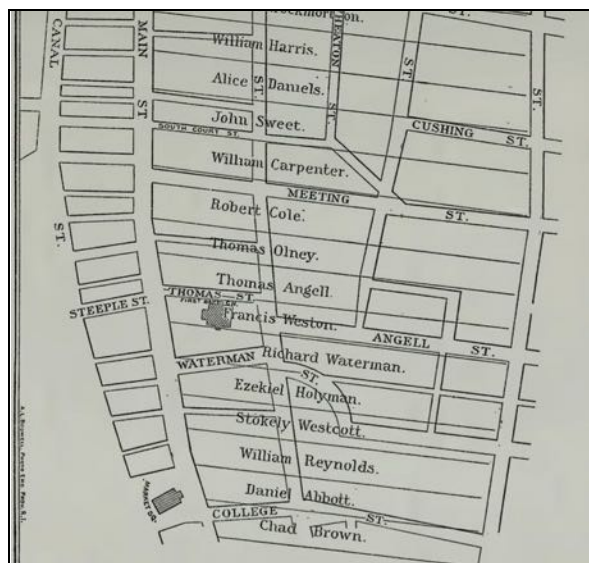
In his last trip to England in 1680, Harris once again represented the Pawtuxet settlers, but also became an agent for Connecticut in its claims for the Narragansett lands, very much at odds with Rhode Island interests. During this trip, his ship was seized by an Algerian corsair, and he became a slave along the Barbary Coast. Being released over a year later after a very high ransom had been paid on his behalf, he made his way back to London where he died three days after his arrival there.

Early life

Harris was baptized in Northbourne, Kent, England on 9 December 1610, the fourth of five children born to Andrew Harris and Jane Bagley of Northbourne. He was a young child when his father died in 1616, after which his mother married James Grigges, who died soon, and then she married James Sayer. On 22 October 1628, when Harris was almost 18, he began a seven-year apprenticeship as a needle-maker, to Thomas Wilson, a member of the Drapers' Company of Eastcheap, London.

Harris was a member of Reverend John Lothrop's Church in London with his brother Thomas and sister Jane, the latter of whom appears on a 1632 church roster. In a church record, the three Harris siblings are listed as being among those "added to the church" at the time when John Lothrop, along with 42 fellow dissenters, were imprisoned. In about 1634 Harris married Susan Hyde, the daughter of John Hyde and Mary Bonfoy, his father-in-law being a member of the Drapers' Company to which Harris had been apprenticed. Harris probably left England in 1635, but certainly by early 1636, and may have first come to Salem in the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

Settling Providence



Harris lot in Providence overlaid on contemporary map

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:Prov_Home_Lots.2.jpg

When Roger Williams was forced to leave Salem in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, he spent part of the winter (early 1636) in Seekonk in the Plymouth Colony, where four other men, including Harris, accompanied him. Later, the families of some of these men and some other families joined Williams in crossing the river into what Williams would name Providence in the future Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations.¹ Traveling with Harris were his wife, Susannah, and his infant son, Andrew. In 1677 Roger Williams mentioned those coming with him to Providence, saying "[I] desired not to be troubled with English company, yet out of pity I gave leave to William Harris, then poor and destitute, to come along in my company."

In 1638 Harris was one of the 12 original proprietors of Providence, when Roger Williams included him, with eleven others, in a deed of the land originally obtained from the Indian sachems Canonicus and Miantonomi. The following year Harris became one of the 12 founding members of the first Baptist Church in America, and in 1640 he and 38 others signed an agreement to establish a government in Providence. By 1638 a group of the Providence settlers living along the Patuxent River, led by William Arnold, began having tensions with other Providence settlers. In 1640 Harris was on a committee with three others to consider the differences between the disputing parties, and come up with an amicable solution. Ultimately matters grew worse to the point that the Pawtuxet settlers put themselves under the jurisdiction of Massachusetts for 16 years before re-uniting with the Providence government.

Clash with Roger Williams

Over the next ten years, Harris was able to accumulate a fair amount of land, and in a 1650 tax list he was assessed more than one pound in taxes, one of the higher amounts in the colony. In 1655 he appears in the Providence section of a list of freemen of the colony. Sometime in the mid-1650s "an inveterate hostility arose" between Harris and Roger Williams. The source of this discord appears to have been their different views on the nature of liberty. Historian Samuel G. Arnold wrote about this enmity, saying: "[This hostility] was carried to a degree of personal invective that mars the exalted character of Williams and detracts from the dignity and worth of his opponent. It was never forgotten by the one or forgiven by the other. Both were men of ardent feelings and of great address, whose mental activity was never at rest."

Harris was almost constantly employed in undertakings that clashed with the interests of Rhode Island, and took on a position that the Arnolds of Pawtuxet previously held, either as a factional leader within the state or the agent and representative of interests abroad. Arnold wrote that this was regrettable because "he brought to whatever he undertook the resources of a great mind and, to all appearances, the honest

convictions of an earnest soul."

Harris had published in a book the notion that one following his conscience should not have to yield to "any human order amongst men," a position that Williams called "unbounded license for individuals." On 12 March 1657, Williams, as President of the colony, issued a warrant for Harris' arrest, on the charge of high treason against the Commonwealth of England. The warrant charged Harris with having published "dangerous writings containing his notorious defiance to the authority of his highness the Lord Protector," and inciting the people into a "traitorous renouncing of their allegiance." The trial of Harris took place at a special session of the General Court in Warwick, where he read a copy of his book while Williams read the original. Williams also read to the court copies of his accusation against Harris and his charges. A few months later, the General Court concluded that Harris' behavior was "both contemptuous and seditious," but nevertheless decided that it was best to send the case to England where judgment could be made, and in the meantime to bind Harris with a bond contingent upon his good behavior. Harris was ultimately absolved of any wrongdoing.

Colonial leader

Harris was active in the affairs of Providence over a period of 16 years, from 1660, when he became a commissioner, to 1676. He served as Deputy for two terms, and as Assistant (magistrate) for seven terms. He was also General Solicitor for a year, and on the Providence Town Council for seven years. In 1667 he was discharged from his office as Assistant based on "many grievous complaints against him." He was fined 50 pounds, but some Assistants, particularly William Carpenter and Benjamin Smith, protested the action against him, and the fine was eventually remitted.

Agent for Pawtuxet interests

In 1663 Harris made a trip to England on business involving the lands at Pawtuxet. Land disputes had been ongoing concerning the Pawtuxet settlers, William Arnold, William Carpenter, and Robert Cole, and Harris became their agent. In 1675 he once again made a trip to England as agent for the Pawtuxet proprietors, with the intent of laying the case before the King, and then in 1679 he made a final trip to England for the same business. In addition, he was also hired by the Connecticut Colony as their agent to support their claims to the Narragansett country. Harris was apparently successful in his claims against the Town of Providence, as alluded to by Governor John Cranston in a January 1680 letter to King Charles II. Nevertheless, the question of jurisdiction and title to the Pawtuxet lands was not ultimately settled until many years after Harris's death.

On 25 December 1679, Harris set sail on a vessel to return to England to represent Connecticut in its claims for the Narragansett Territory. A month later, on 24 January 1680, the ship was commandeered by an Algerian corsair, and Harris was taken to Algiers. As he wrote in a letter while in captivity, on 23 February he was sold into slavery on the Barbary Coast, and imprisoned for over a month.



Harris became a slave in Algiers along the Barbary Coast.
http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:Old_algiers_16th_century.jpg

Though kept captive, he was able to write several letters home and to Connecticut from Algiers in April and May, but it wasn't until June 1680 that Connecticut first became aware of his enslavement. He continued to write letters through July and August, requesting that about 300 pounds in ransom money be raised and sent, and on 14 October 1680 Connecticut ordered that the requested sum be raised. More than 18 months had transpired from his time of capture when on 2 August 1681 an agent informed Mrs. Harris that her husband had been successfully ransomed. Harris was able to cross the Mediterranean Sea, and traverse Spain and France to get back to London. Three days after his arrival at the house of his London landlord, John Stokes, he died, though the date this happened is unknown. It was on 3 December 1681 that an agent informed his wife of his death. The inventory of his estate took place the next month, and in February 1682 his will was approved by the Providence Council.

Family

William Harris had four siblings, at least three of whom immigrated to New England. His oldest sibling, Jane, was baptized in Northbourne on 23 December 1604, and on 21 June 1635 was admitted to the church at Scituate, Massachusetts as "Jane Harrice". Nothing more has been found about her in New England. The next oldest sibling, Parnell, was baptized at Northbourne on 3 August 1606, and her name appeared on a March 1635 passenger list for the *Hercules* out of Sandwich, Kent with John Witherly as the master. Passengers were required to obtain certificates for their travel, and she had obtained hers on 19 March, signed by Jos Leech, the vicar of Bow Parish in London. The name just below her name on the ship passenger roster is that of James Sayers of Northbourne, her stepbrother. Parnell married Thomas Roberts of Providence, and both she and her husband died in 1676 after fleeing to Aquidneck Island following the devastation of Providence during King Phillips War. On 3 July 1676 William Harris petitioned the Newport Council for administration of Parnell's estate.

The next sibling of Harris was Ann, baptized 29 May 1608. She apparently lived well into adulthood, but no record has been found for her, other than being mentioned in the estate of William Harris: a quarter of the estate of Parnell Roberts belonged to William Harris "in the right of Anne Harris." William was the fourth of the Harris children, and the youngest was Thomas, baptized in Northbourne on 11 July 1613. Thomas was married to a woman named Elizabeth, likely in England about 1636, and was first of record in Providence on 20 August 1637. He held many positions in the Providence government including commissioner, lieutenant, juryman and councilman, and died there on 7 June 1686.

William Harris and his wife Susannah had five known children. Their oldest son, Andrew (1635-1686), married Mary Tew, the sister of Deputy Governor Henry Tew. Their daughter Mary (died 1718) married Thomas Borden, son of Richard and Joan Borden, and daughter Susannah married Ephraim Carpenter, the son of Pawtuxet settler William Carpenter. Their daughter Howlong (died 1708) married late in life (as his second wife) Arthur Fenner, who with his first wife was ancestor of Rhode Island Governor Arthur Fenner. Their son, Toleration (1645-1675) was killed during King Phillips War. William Harris is a great grandfather of Rhode Island deputy governor Elisha Brown.

Legacy

Roger Williams, who had an antagonistic relationship with Harris, wrote this about him: W. Harris, who, being an impudent morris-dancer in Kent...under a cloak of separation, got in with myself, till his self-ends and restless strife, and at last his atheistical denying of heaven and hell, made honest souls to fly from him. Now he courts the Baptists: then he kicks them off and flatters the Foxians [Quakers]; then the drunkards (which he calls all that are not of the former two amongst us); then knowing the prejudices of the other Colonies against us, he dares to abuse his Majesty and Council, to bring New England upon us.

Rhode Island historian Thomas W. Bicknell wrote a much more favorable commentary, saying, "William Harris was one of the greatest of the founders of Providence, in many points superior to Roger Williams, but a very different type of man. Realism ruled his action, while Mr. Williams dreamed dreams. Harris had

a legal mind and knew legal forms, methods, and principles, superior to any man in Providence."

- [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William_Harris_\(settler\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William_Harris_(settler))

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

RANDALL HOLDEN
RI
Ancestor of Susan Keith

Randall Holden (c. 1612 – 1692) was an early inhabitant of the Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, was one of the original founders of Portsmouth, and one of the co-founders of the town of Warwick.

Coming from Salisbury in England, he is first recorded in New England as one of the signers of the compact establishing the settlement of Portsmouth by followers of the banished dissident minister, Anne Hutchinson. Following a few years on Aquidneck Island (called Rhode Island), he joined Samuel Gorton and ten others in establishing the town of Warwick in early 1643, on land purchased of the Indian sachems.

The first few years of the Warwick settlement were fraught with difficulty, and the settler's lands were claimed by Massachusetts, who sent soldiers to apprehend the Warwick settlers for supposed infractions against the local Indian sachems. The Warwick settlers were hauled off to face trial in Boston, but their charges had nothing to do with the sachems; instead they were charged with heresy and sedition based on their religious views. Being sent to various jails in the Boston area, they were eventually released, but were banished not only from the Massachusetts colony, but also from their own Warwick lands. Holden soon thereafter joined Gorton and John Greene on a trip to England to seek redress for the wrongs committed against them. Being successful in their mission, Holden and Greene returned to New England in 1646 with a new charter for their settlement, and protection from the crown.

Upon returning to the Rhode Island colony, Holden became heavily involved in the affairs of his town of Warwick, and of the entire colony. During the next 40 years he frequently served in a variety of roles as councilman and treasurer at the town level, and in the colony he was often Assistant to the President (or Governor), Commissioner, or Deputy. Holden was so highly respected within the colony that in 1676 during the dire events of King Philip's War he was one of 16 of the colony's most esteemed citizens to be called to the General Assembly for their counsel. Holden continued to serve the colony into his mid 70s, only a few years before his death in 1692 at the age of 80.

Life

Randall Holden was born about 1612, and originated in Salisbury, Wiltshire, England. He sailed to New England as a young man, and the first record of his name occurred when he and Roger Williams witnessed the deed whereby the Indian sachems Canonicus and Miantonomo sold Aquidneck Island to William Coddington for the settlement of Portsmouth by the followers of Anne Hutchinson. He had apparently lived in Boston, because this is where the signing of the Portsmouth Compact took place, and his signature is 19th on the list of the 23 names on that document. In this compact, the followers of Hutchinson established a non-sectarian civil government upon the universal consent of the inhabitants, with a Christian focus. Planning initially to settle in New Netherland, the group was persuaded by Roger Williams to purchase some land of the Indians on the Narragansett Bay. This they did, settling on the north east end of Aquidneck Island, and establishing a settlement they called Pocasset, but in 1639 changing the name to Portsmouth. William Coddington was elected the first chief magistrate of the settlement, not being called Governor, but instead using the Biblical title of Judge.

Holden and John Greene boarded a ship in New Amsterdam and sailed back to England, where Holden and Greene spent two years, and Gorton would spend four years.

In 1646 Gorton, while in England, published one of his many writings, entitled *Simplicity's Defence Against Seven Headed Policy*, detailing the wrongs that were put upon the Shawomet settlers. The same year he was given what he had come for: the Commissioner of Plantations, responsible for overseeing the activities of the colonies, issued an order to Massachusetts to allow the residents of Shawomet and other lands included in the patent to "freely and quietly live and plant" without being disquieted by external pressures. In September 1646 Holden and Greene returned to Boston with a pass from the Commissioners of Plantations allowing them safe passage through the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

Two years later, in 1648, Gorton returned to New England, landing in Boston that May. His arrest was ordered, but he also had a letter of protection from Robert Rich, 5th Earl of Warwick, which saw him safely back to his family. In honour of the Earl's intercession in this colonial difficulty, Gorton changed the name of Shawomet to Warwick.



RI Royal Charter of 1663

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:RI.Royal_Charter_1663.angled.jpg

Holden was one of the prominent citizens named in the Royal Charter of 1663. Upon his return from England, Holden immediately became involved in the affairs of the town and colony. In 1647 he was on the Town Council, was Town Treasurer, and was frequently made the Moderator of town meetings. In the same year he was also selected as Warwick's Assistant to the President of the colony, a position he would hold seven more times during the next 30 years. He was also elected as Commissioner for six one-year terms from 1652 to 1663, and as a Deputy for eight terms between 1666 and 1686. Holden's name appears on a list of Warwick freeman in 1655, and at some point he earned the

title of Captain.

Holden was one of several prominent citizens named in the Royal Charter of 1663, which was delivered to the colony in November of that year, and which outlined a government with broad freedoms for the colony. In 1671, he and others were authorised to make assessments on towns for back taxes.

Holden was very highly esteemed within the Rhode Island colony, so much so that in April 1676, during the chaos of King Philip's War, it was voted by the General Assembly that "in these troublesome times and straits in this colony, the Assembly, desiring to have the advice and concurrence of the most judicious inhabitants, if it may be had for the good of the whole, do desire at their sitting the company and counsel of...Randall Holden" and 15 others. Among the others were former governors and deputy governors, including Benedict Arnold, Gregory Dexter, and James Barker.

In 1679 Holden was once again in England, this time with John Greene, Jr., and wrote a letter to the Commissioners of Trade about Mount Hope, being a property disputed with the Plymouth Colony. Two years later he sold 750 acres of land to Stephen Arnold (son of William Arnold), obtaining 119 pounds for the transaction, and in 1683 he was appointed to a committee to draft a letter to the King. Holden continued to be active in civic affairs into his mid 70s, and in 1687 was appointed as Justice of the Court of Common Pleas. He died on 23 August 1692, at a fairly advanced age.^[6]

Family

Holden married Frances Dungan, the daughter of William and Frances (Latham) Dungan. With wife Frances, Holden had 11 children, one of whom was Randall Holden, Jr., who was very active in colonial affairs, serving for many years as Deputy, Assistant, Major, and Speaker of the House of Deputies. Another son, Charles Holden, married Catharine Greene, a daughter of Deputy Governor John Greene, Jr., a granddaughter of fellow Warwick co-founder John Greene, and ancestors of state governor William Greene. Their daughter Susannah Holden married Benjamin Greene, another grandson of Warwick co-founder John Greene. A great grandson through his daughter Frances was John Gardner who served as the deputy governor of the colony for several years, and was also the sixth Chief Justice of the colony's Superior Court.

- http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Randall_Holden

-

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

JOSEPH JENCKES

RI

Ancestor of Joan Stone and Connie Stone

Joseph Jenckes was elected the first governor of Rhode Island who lived outside of the city of Newport. His father, grandfather and wife contributed to make him a successful politician.



Portrait of Governor Joseph Jenckes

www.maineantiquedigest.com

Governor Joseph Jenckes grew up in a successful family. His great grandfather, John Jenks, was a cutler in England and made knives, some with silver handles with filigree and green and lilac flowers in enamel, for the King's table. Some are in the Victoria and Albert Museum in London. John Jenks and Joseph Jenckes (Governor Jenckes' grandfather), also a cutler in England made swords. Both used the sign of the thistle on their products. One sword in the Powysland Museum in Welshpool, Wales is marked with the name "Joseph Jenckes."

Joseph, Governor Jenckes' grandfather, apparently worked in Hounslow, Middlesex where he could have worked with skilled German cutlers and learned the principle of water-powered machinery. In Northumberland in 1639 he petitioned to set up a new invented Engine or Blade mill on the river at Woorton Bridge. In 1641, Joseph, a widower, had a blacksmith shop in Maine on the Tweed River. In 1642 he was working in an Iron-works in Saugus, Massachusetts. In 1646 he applied to the General Court for the first patent for machinery in America. It involved making engines for mills using water in a new invented sawmill to make scythes, etc. It was difficult for him to be financially successful in operating the mill. He had to sell it in 1651, but bought it back in 1656, and mortgaged it six months later. In 1652 he was chosen to make the dies for the first coins for the new Boston mint. In 1654 the selectmen of Boston arranged for him to make a first fire engine in America.

His son, Joseph (Governor Jenckes' father), came to Massachusetts from England as a young man and worked in the iron-works. About 1668 he built the first house in Pawtucket and obtained land on the Pawtucket for a sawmill and forge. In 1676 the forge and his home were destroyed by Indians in King Philip's War, but after the war he rebuilt. He was a deputy to the Assembly in 1679-91 and Assistant for many years, 1680-98. He was on a committee that purchased a bell for the Assembly and

on another one that wrote a letter to William and Mary when they ascended to the throne. In 1695 the Assembly chose him to run the eastern line of the colony.

Governor Jenckes was a Baptist. He was 7' 2" tall. He married Martha Brown, granddaughter of Chad Brown, an associate of Roger Williams, and of Obadiah Holmes. She was the daughter of John Brown of Rhode Island. They had nine children. After Martha Brown Jenckes' death, he married Mrs. Alice Dexter, a widow, on 3 February 1726/7. She died in 1735.

A deputy of the General Assembly beginning at age 35 for twelve years, he was the Major in the militia of the Mainland towns from 1707 to 1711. As a commissioner he was appointed to settle boundary questions. He obtained agreement between Rhode Island and Massachusetts to construct the first bridge across Pawtucket Falls. Continuing to work on boundary disputes, he went to England as Agent concerning the boundary lines between Rhode Island, Massachusetts and Connecticut

He was Speaker of the House of Deputies for four years, and became Deputy Governor for thirteen years until 1727. He served as Governor of Rhode Island for six years. There are copies of several letters that he wrote to King George II.

He was vain. While governor, he ordered a cloak from England similar to cloaks of other colonial governors. Justice prevailed when he received a clock instead, because of a clerical error.

He was blind for a few years before his death on 25 August 1740. He was "deemed to die intestate by reason of his insanity of mind." When he had declined to run for governor in 1733, one of the most courageous things he said was, "I now perceive my natural faculties abating. If I should continue longer in office, it is possible I may be insensible of their decay, and be unwilling to resign my post when I am no longer able to fill it."

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

JOHN RATHBONE

RI

Ancestor of Marion Emerson

My ancestor, John Rathbone, was born in England in 1634 and came to America with his parents, Thomas and Alice Rathbone, when he was a year old. They settled in the Dorchester area of Massachusetts. When he was 26 John and his wife Margaret relocated to Rhode Island. We know this because there was a meeting at the home of a Dr. Alcock to discuss the purchase of Block Island and he is mentioned as one of the participants.

The first English settlers arrived at Block Island in 1661. They landed at Cow Cove. There is now a monument called Settler's Rock with John Rathbone's name on it; indicating he was one of the first settlers. Cow Cove was named because these men pushed their cows overboard and made them swim ashore.

Block Island was prey to the pillaging of passing ships in those days. One time three French vessels came ashore and found out that John Rathbone was rich. He was taken captive and beaten, but no money was found. It was actually his son, John Jr., that the pirates held, so the father was able to escape with his money.

John Rathbone was made Freeman in New Shoreham, Block Island some four years later. In 1676 he was selected a surveyor of highways, and then followed his service as a Deputy to the Rhode Island General Assembly from 1681 to 1684.

John's will was dated 12 February 1702. At the time of his death the will mentions five sons: John Jr., William, Joseph, Thomas and Samuel; and three daughters, Sarah, Margaret and Elizabeth. He provided well for his wife, Margaret, who survived him, leaving her many things including movable and household goods, houses, and chattels, cattle, sheep and horse kind, as well as income from his house in Newport. At his wife's death the will gives his household goods to his daughters and livestock and his homes to his sons.

John Rathbone was a Deputy to the Rhode Island General Assembly in the years 1681 to 1684, and it is this service that qualifies me to belong to the National Society of the Colonial Dames of America from the colonial state of Rhode Island.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

JOHN WAITE

RI

Ancestor of Margaret Phillips Rinehart Christman

John Waite, born in England about 1618, came to New England aboard the *Susan and Ellen* of London in 1638. He was one of the earlier settlers of Mystic Side (afterwards Malden).

In March of 1647/8, the colony allowed him 41 pounds, 8 shillings "for his writing one booke of lawes and for finding paper for both bookes." After the incorporation of Malden in 1649, he became a leader in its civil and religious affairs. In 1666 he succeeded Joseph Hills in the House of Deputies and represented Malden during a period of 18 years.

In 1680, he was appointed a member of the Committee to revise the laws he had written about in 1647/8. He received a nomination to the Magistracy in 1683 and was chosen Speaker of the House of Deputies in 1684. Soon after, due to failing eyesight, he retired from public life.

John Waite died on 26 September 1693.

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

SAMUEL WILBORE

RI

Ancestor of Virginia Thomas McRoberts and Ethel Thomas Sanford

Samuel Wilbore was born about 1595 in Braintree, Essex, England. He married Anne Smith in Sible Hedingham, Essex, England in 1619/20. They had five (or six) children, all presumably born in England. He is listed as one of the first settlers of Rhode Island. The family's land and possessions lie mainly in the town of Little Compton, Rhode Island.

Samuel and his family came to New England as passengers in the Winthrop fleet of 1630. He took the oath of freeman (white male over 21, free to work, own land, and vote) on 4 March 1633/4 at the General Court in Massachusetts. He and Anne were admitted to the First Church of Boston on 1 December 1633.

Samuel was one of the founders of the iron industry at Taunton, Massachusetts, building with his associates the first furnace in New England. He became wealthy for his day and prominent in the community. However, he was banished to Rhode Island for his association with a group who were part of a religious movement led by Roger Williams. Although he owned a house in Boston and one in Taunton, he abandoned both, and with seventeen fellow exiles purchased from the Indians the Island of Aquidneck (later named Isle of Rhodes or Rhode Island). He moved there with his family in 1638. The eighteen exiles formed a colony, signing a solemn compact (the Portsmouth RI compact) on 7 March 1638.

Samuel later returned to Boston, humbly making the request that he be permitted to return: "...I humbly crave your worships prayer to the Lord for pardon and pardon from yourselves; I hae been noe enemy of this state, nor through assistance of the Lord never shall." His wife Anne died before 1645, at age 52. He then married Elizabeth Freelove; Samuel and Elizabeth were admitted to the Church of Boston on 29 November 1645.

Samuel Wilbore died 24 July 1656 in Boston, Massachusetts at age 61. In his will he left to his "Wife Elizabeth all the Moveable goods...in my house in Boston wher att p'sent I doe habitt...also all my sheep and lambes att Dorchester...alsoe a mare and coult att John Mores att Brantrey." He left to his eldest son Samuel all his lands at "Road Hand and debts due him from Richard Smither the elder...and alsoe six hundred pounds of Iron lying at Taunton in my Dwelling house there."

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

ROGER WILLIAMS
RI
Ancestor of Elisabeth Kenny Ecke*

*deceased

Roger Williams was an out-spoken advocate of religious freedom and the founder of Rhode Island.

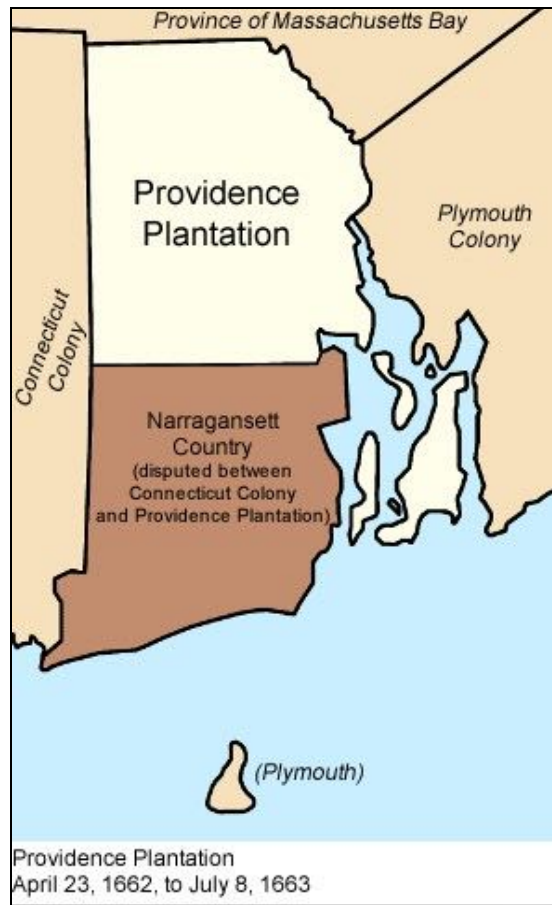


Roger Williams
www.rogerwilliams.org

Born in London in 1603, he became a Puritan, at the age of 11, against his parent's wishes. Educated at Cambridge he was fluent in several languages, including Latin, Greek, Dutch, Hebrew and French. It was during his short term as a private chaplain, at Sir William Masham's manor house at Otes in Essex, that he met his wife Mary Barnard, thought to be the daughter of Reverend Richard Barnard of Nottinghamshire. They were married at High Laver Church on December 15, 1629. He and his bride set sail for Boston in December 1630 during the Puritan "Great Migration".

After arriving in Boston, he became a minister, first at Salem, then Plymouth and then back to Salem where he most often gathered his followers at his own home. As a minister at Salem, he had a conflict with the Massachusetts Bay Colony civil authorities, when he stated that a man's conscience was not under state control and that the king had no legal right to Indian land nor to dictate religious beliefs. He was banished from the colony in 1635 for spreading "diverse and dangerous opinions" that questioned the church; this law was not repealed until 1936.

Rather than be deported back to England he fled and hid with the Indians, temporarily leaving his wife and daughters behind. They ended up settling at the headwaters of the Narragansett Bay on Mashassuck River. He founded Rhode Island in 1636 after first buying the land from Indians. The original deed for this purchase can be seen in the archives of the City of Providence. This settlement, known as Providence Plantation, was formed on a principle of equality and the agreement set for a unique government that provided for religious liberty and a separation between church and state.



Providence Plantation
en.wikipedia.org

In 1639, he again changed his religious beliefs and became a Baptist and quickly formed the First Baptist Church in America which still exists today. There is still some debate over whether it really was the "first" Baptist church or whether it was actually second after the one formed in Newport, Rhode Island by his friend John Clarke. Although deeply religious his entire life his stint as a Baptist was short-lived as he never believed that mere men were able to create churches or administer church ordinances. He was made a Freeman in 1655.

Williams was often called upon to negotiate between the colonist governments and the Native American governments. On a trip back to England, Williams obtained a patent for Rhode Island, allowing full religious freedom in 1644. In 1652, Rhode Island was also the first colony to make slavery illegal. Because of his outspoken nature he held many other titles including President of the colony of Rhode Island, Providence town council member, commissioner and deputy.

Williams died in early 1683 and was buried on his own property. Some time later in the nineteenth century his remains were moved to the tomb of a descendant in the North Burial Ground. Finally, in 1936, they were placed within a bronze container and put into the base of a monument on Prospect Terrace Park in Providence. When his remains were discovered for reburial, they were under an apple tree. The roots of the tree had grown into the spot where Williams' skull rested and followed the path of his decomposing bones and grew roughly in the shape of his skeleton. Only a small amount of bone was found to be reburied. The "Williams Root" is now part of the collection of the Rhode Island Historical Society, where it is mounted on a board in the basement of the John Brown House Museum.



Williams Root
www.roadsideamerica.com

Never one to keep his opinions to himself there are numerous letters and dissertations that he penned as well as a number of books written about his life, beliefs and how they have shaped America. The two volumes of the correspondence of Roger Williams recently published by the Rhode Island Historical Society, Glenn W. LaFantasie, Editor, present an excellent picture of his philosophy and personality. Unfortunately, there was no known painting made of him during his lifetime, although many artists and sculptors have portrayed him as they envision him.

Books/publications he authored:

- .A Key into the Language of America
- .The Bloody Tenent of Persecution, of Cause of Conscience
- .The Bloody Tenent yet more Bloody.
- .The Hireling Ministry None of Christ's
- .Experiments of Spiritual Life and Health, and their Preservation
- .George Fox Digg'd out of his Burrowes
- .There is also a volume of his letters in the seven volume set "Williams's Works"

Tributes and memorials:

- .Roger Williams National Memorial, established in 1965, is a park in downtown Providence.
- .Roger Williams Park, Providence, Rhode Island, and the Roger Williams Park Zoo within it are named in his honor.
- .Roger Williams University, in Bristol, Rhode Island, is named in his honor.
- .Roger Williams Dining Hall, at the University of Rhode Island, was named after the co- founder of Rhode Island. Today, it is fondly referred to as "Rojo's."
- .The Green Lake Conference Center (American Baptists), founded in 1943, in Green Lake, Wisconsin, has dedicated its main lodge as the, "Roger Williams Inn."
- Roger Williams was selected in 1872 to represent Rhode Island in the National Statuary Hall Collection in the United States Capitol.
- Roger Williams is depicted, with other prominent reformers, on the International Monument to the Reformation in Geneva, Switzerland.

Famous descendants include John Rockefeller, Garrison Keillor, and Julia Ward Howe.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

South Carolina



http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Province_of_South_Carolina

[Click on Specific Ancestor for Biography](#)

ROBERT ANDERSON Ancestor of Florence Lewis Mitchell and Belle Mitchell Wood

ANDREW PICKENS Ancestor of Paulie Jones

- Revolutionary War Hero Andrew Pickens
- Andrew Pickens
- Andrew Pickens Gravestone

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

ROBERT ANDERSON

SC

Ancestor of Florence Lewis Mitchell and Belle Mitchell Wood

Our progenitor, General Robert Anderson, was the son of Virginia pioneers, raised and educated in Augusta County. As a young man, he was sent to South Carolina as a surveyor. He remained at work there in dangerous Cherokee country for two years. Before he left Virginia he had fallen in love with Miss Ann Thompson and she returned his affection. Unfortunately, an exchange of letters was virtually impossible in the circumstances.

His sweetheart, no doubt thinking him killed by Indians after so long an absence, was courted by another suitor and agreed to marry him... but, of course, Robert was not dead! As soon as his assignment was finished, he started home. On the way he met an acquaintance who brought the unwelcome news of Ann's approaching marriage. Robert set spurs to horse and galloped with the wind to Virginia.

On 4 November 1765, which was to be Ann's wedding day, the house was full of guests and Ann was upstairs getting dressed. By chance, or at the sound of hooves, she looked out the window where she had often hoped to see her love coming. Lo and behold, there he came riding up the front drive! She threw a shawl around her shoulders and rushed down the stairs to meet him, calling to her friends, "Yonder comes Robert Anderson and I love him more than anything!" Another version was that she was heard to shout, "Yonder comes Robert Anderson and I love his little finger more than I love the other man's whole body." They were married two days later and shortly afterward, moved to South Carolina, where he received three land grants.

They eventually had five children and he was intimately involved with the growing community. When the war broke out in 1775, Robert took an active stand against the British. He fought many battles and later was awarded over 5,000 acres on the Keowa River. There they built a beautiful plantation and he became, once again, involved with politics and state affairs.

Ann died in 1790. Robert married again in 1793 to Lydia Maverick, a widow and mother-in-law to his daughter Elizabeth. She must not have lived too long for he married a third time to Jane Harris Reese, widow of Reverend Thomas Reese, second pastor of Old Stone Church in Pendleton. It is said that when he asked Mrs. Reese to marry him, she said, "Why General Anderson, you surprise me very much. I never thought of such a thing." Whereupon he replied, "Oh yes, Mrs. Reese. You have thought a great deal about it, for when Dr. Reese was alive you stopped at my pew every Sunday morning to inquire after my family, but since his death you have been very shy of me."

They were evidently happily married for ten years. She died at age 54 in 1806. He called her his ever-honored wife of blessed memory. He died in 1813 after a successful and distinguished life. His will is kindness itself, being just and fair not only to his children and grandchildren, but to others as well. The city of Anderson, as well as Anderson County in South Carolina, are named for him.

Robert Anderson was originally buried on his plantation. However, his grave and those of his wives were moved to the Old Stone Church in 1933. A plaque and tombstone were dedicated to his memory. Many of his descendants were present at the dedication, including two of his direct great-great-great granddaughters. The plaque reads: Robert Anderson (1741-1813): A distinguished soldier of the American Revolution; was a Captain in the ninety-six Dist. of S C Militia - 1779-1781; promoted to rank of Colonel for valiant service at the battle of Cowpens in Jan. 1781; chosen Brig. General of state militia just after the close of war; County and City of Anderson named in his honor." Despite his great influence on the Upstate's history, there are no surviving images of General Robert Anderson.

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

ANDREW PICKENS

SC

Ancestor of Paulie Jones

Andrew Pickens (September 13, 1739 – August 11, 1817) was a militia leader in the American Revolution and a member of the United States House of Representatives from South Carolina.

Early Life

Pickens was born in Bucks County, Pennsylvania, the son of Scots-Irish immigrants, Andrew Pickens, Sr. and Anne (*née* Davis). His paternal great-grandparents were Huguenots Robert Andrew Pickens (Robert André Picon) and Esther-Jeanne, widow Bonneau, of South Carolina and La Rochelle, France.^[1]

In 1752 his family moved to the Waxhaws on the South Carolina frontier. He sold his farm there in 1764 and bought land in Abbeville County, South Carolina, near the Georgia border.

He established the Hopewell Plantation on the Seneca River, at which several treaties with Native Americans were held, each called the Treaty of Hopewell. Just across the river was the Cherokee town of Isunigu ("Seneca").

Military career

He served in the Anglo-Cherokee War in 1760–1761. When the Revolutionary War started, he sided with the rebel militia, and was made a captain. He rose to the rank of Brigadier General during the war. On February 14, 1779, he was part of the militia victory at the Battle of Kettle Creek in Georgia.

Pickens was captured at the Siege of Charleston in 1780. He saw action at the Battle of Cowpens, Siege of Augusta, Siege of Ninety Six, and the Battle of Eutaw Springs.

Pickens also led a campaign in north Georgia against the Cherokee Indians late in the war. His victorious campaign led to the Cherokees ceding significant portions of land between the Savannah and Chattahoochee rivers in the Long Swamp Treaty signed in what is currently Pickens County, Georgia. Pickens was well regarded by Native Americans that he dealt with and was given the name Skyagunsta, "The Wizard Owl."

He and three hundred of his men went home to sit out the war on parole.

Pickens' parole did not last, however. After Tory raiders destroyed most of his property and frightened his family, he informed the British that they had violated the terms of parole and rejoined the war. During this period of the war, Pickens would join Francis Marion and Thomas Sumter as the most well-known partisan leaders in the Carolinas. Sumter also resumed fighting under similar circumstances. Pickens was soon operating in the Ninety Six District.

- Cowpens, South Carolina: Jan. 17, 1781:

At the Battle of Cowpens, Brig. General Daniel Morgan gave Pickens command of the militia, which played a key role in the battle. On the evening of January 16, Morgan personally instructed the militia to hold its ground while firing two rounds and then retreat. On the morning of January 17, Pickens and the militia carried out the plan perfectly, which led Lt. Colonel Banastre Tarleton and British to believe that the militia was fleeing. The British blindly charged ahead and were drawn into a double flanking and soundly defeated. Following Cowpens, South Carolina Governor John Rutledge promoted Pickens to brigadier general. He would also be awarded a sword by Congress.

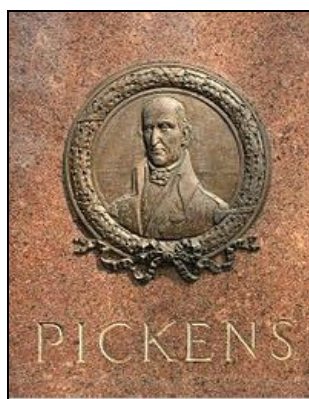
- Augusta, Georgia: May 22–June 5, 1781:

Pickens' militia was soon recalled to defend their own homes and so he missed the Battle of Guilford Courthouse on March 15, 1781. In April, he raised a regiments of state regulars. In May 1781, Maj. General Nathanael Greene sent Pickens and Lt. Colonel Henry Lee to support Elijah Clarke in operations against Augusta, Georgia. The siege began on May 22 and after maneuvering, securing outposts and the cutting off of reinforcements by the Patriots, Colonel Thomas Brown surrendered Augusta on June 5,

1781.

- Ninety Six, South Carolina: May 22–June 19, 1781:

Following the surrender of Augusta, Pickens and Lt. Colonel Lee joined General Greene in his siege at Ninety Six, South Carolina. Greene had begun his siege on May 22, 1781, the same day that Augusta had been besieged. On June 11, Greene ordered Pickens and Lt. Colonel William Washington to aid Thomas Sumter in blocking a relief column led by Lord Rawdon. However, Sumter instead moved to Fort Granby, allowing Rawdon to make his way to Ninety Six. On June 19, Greene had to give up the siege and retreat after a failed assault.

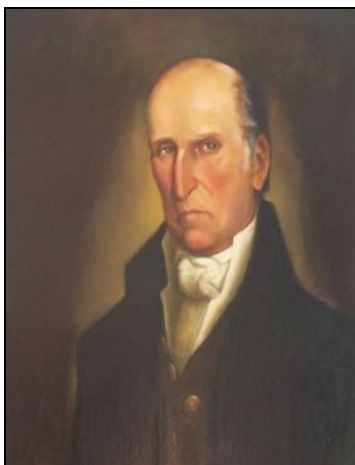


Revolutionary hero Andrew Pickens - plaque at the South Carolina statehouse

[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:Andrew_Pickens_\(commemorative_plaque_at_the_South_Carolina_state_house\).jpg](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:Andrew_Pickens_(commemorative_plaque_at_the_South_Carolina_state_house).jpg)

Family

He married Rebecca Floride Calhoun in 1765. They had 12 children, Mary Pickens (1766–1836); Lt. Gov. Ezekiel Pickens (1768–1813), Ann Pickens (1770–1846), son (1772), Jane Pickens (1773–1816); Margaret Pickens (1777–1830); Gov. Andrew Pickens, Jr. (1779–1838), son (1782); Rebecca Pickens (1784–1831); Catherine Pickens (1786–1871) and Joseph Pickens (1791–1853). Andrew Pickens became governor of South Carolina in 1817–1819 and Ezekiel Pickens became a lieutenant governor of South Carolina from 1802 to 1804. A grandson was Francis Wilkinson Pickens who was also a governor of South Carolina from 1860–1862.



Andrew Pickens

Andrew Pickens died near Tamasee, South Carolina, in Oconee County, on Aug. 11, 1817. He is buried at Old Stone Church Cemetery in Clemson, South Carolina.



Andrew Pickens' grave marker at Old Stone Church cemetery

[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:Andrew_Pickens
%27_grave_marker_at_Old_Stone_Church_\(Clemson\)_cemetery.JPG](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:Andrew_Pickens_%27_grave_marker_at_Old_Stone_Church_(Clemson)_cemetery.JPG)

Andrew Pickens is also the uncle (through his marriage to Rebecca Floride Calhoun) to John C. Calhoun (1782–1850) who was a leading American politician and political theorist during the first half of the 19th century, who hailed from South Carolina. John C. Calhoun's home can be found in the town of Pickens located in Pickens County, South Carolina. It is a famous historical landmark in the state of South Carolina. (http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_C._Calhoun)

Memorials

Fort Pickens in Florida is named in his honor as is Pickens County, Alabama; Pickens County, Georgia; and Pickens and Pickens County in his adopted home state of South Carolina.

Pickens was a 7th great grandfather of former Senator and 2004 presidential candidate John Edwards. He is also the namesake of Pickens High School.

The Patriot

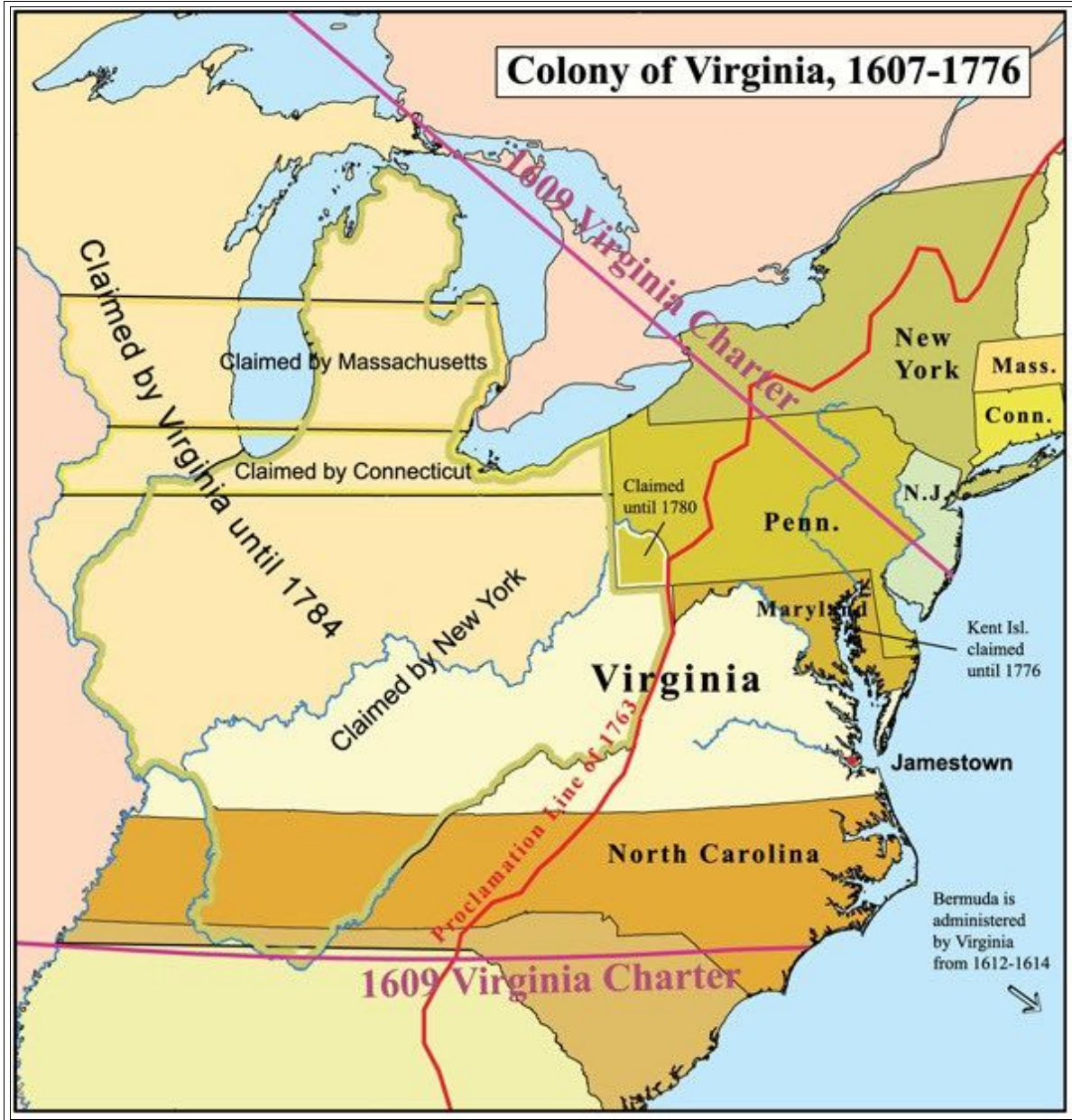
Pickens and his actions served as one of the sources for the fictional character of Benjamin Martin in *The Patriot*, a motion picture released in 2000.

- [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Andrew_Pickens_\(congressman\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Andrew_Pickens_(congressman))

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

Virginia



http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Colony_of_Virginia

[Click on Specific Ancestor for Biography](#)

ARCHIBALD ALEXANDER Ancestor of Margaret Parks Harris

TEMPERANCE BAILEY Ancestor of Terry Whitcomb

• **Bailey's Point**

ROBERT BOLLING Ancestor of Wendy Angel, Mimi Ewens and Marion Smith

FRANCIS EPES Ancestor of Diane Young Bell

WILLIAM FERRAR Ancestor of Mary Hollis Clark

THOMAS GRAVES Ancestor of Frances Buckley and Patsy Teaff

BENJAMIN HARRISON I Ancestor of Vicki Eddy and Dorothea Rodimon

EDWARD HERNDON Ancestor of Ann Boyd

AARON HIGGENBOTHAM Ancestor of Carol Buckley and Maureen Buckley

ANTHONY HOSKINS Ancestor of Ernestine Cox Peak

FRANCIS MASON Ancestor of Marion Freeman

GEORGE MASON III Ancestor of Florence Weltzheimer
• Gunston Hall

RICHARD PACE Ancestor of Stephanie Jewett Swift
Paces Paines

JOHN PAGE Ancestor of Mary Ruyle
• John Page, 13th Governor of Virginia
• House of John Page, Williamsburg VA
• Broadside, order by John Page, president of the council, ordering state militia to be trained and prepared for battle, 20 August 1776

ALEXANDER PARKER Ancestor of Diane Shepherd

CAPTAIN JOHN PHELPS Ancestor of Sarah Rogers

WILLIAM RANDOLPH Ancestor of Julia Samaniego
• William Randolph, Speaker of VA House of Burgesses

GEORGE READE Ancestor of Louise Claridge Wilson Everett

ABRAHAM SALLEE Ancestor of Mary Anne Curtis Curray
• St. Martin, Isle of Re, Province of Aunis, France
• The Huguenot Settlement of Manakin east of Richmond, Virginia
• Patents 667,667,682,& 898, French Lands granted to the French refugees,
• Huguenot Society Founders of Manakin Virginia

ALEXANDER SPOTSWOOD Ancestor of Laura Todd
• Governor Alexander Spotswood

WILLIAM TRIGG I Ancestor of Marykay Jones Pflum Burch

JOHN WEST Ancestor of Patricia Fleming

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

ARCHIBALD ALEXANDER
VA
Ancestor of Margaret Parks Harris

Archibald Alexander has family ties rooted deep in the Highlands of Scotland all the way back to Robert the Bruce. Archibald was born in 1708 and grew up to marry a cousin named Margaret Parks, who was a French Huguenot. A while after they were married, they moved to Pennsylvania near Nottingham. After living there with their three sons for two years, they moved south into Virginia.

Archibald was a multifaceted man who is best described by a family historian, writing in the language of his time.

"About the year 1736 three brothers emigrated to America, came from Ireland, were of the Scottish race. Their father, Thomas Alexander, had removed from Scotland to the neighborhood of Londonderry. One of these brothers, Archibald Alexander, settled first in Pennsylvania.

"After living in Pennsylvania two years, Archibald removed to New Virginia, as the country was then called. He settled in the Great Valley of Virginia situated between the Blue Ridge and the North Mountain.

"Archibald Alexander was a man of some remarkable points. At the solicitation of others and for the sake of his children, he gave lessons to such of the neighboring young as would resort to him at night. He was below the common height, was thick set, broad breasted and strongly built. His face was broad, and his eyes large, black and prominent. The expression of his countenance was calm and benignant, and his manner of speaking was very kind and affectionate.

"He raised a company of men, called Rangers; and as their Captain performed a tour of duty on the Great Kanohowa and the Ohio. For this service he received in connection with other officers a right to locate several thousand acres of land in Kentucky. Archibald Alexander was also a Captain in the French and Indian Wars and in the Sandy Creek Expedition. Perhaps no man ever left behind him a higher character for uprightness and benignity than OLD ERESBELL ALEXANDER (old irascible Alexander), as he was called by the Scottish people."

He finally settled in Rockbridge County where the famous landmark Natural Bridge is located. Archibald Alexander died in 1780 after spending his last years among the rolling hills and gray rocks so reminiscent of Scotland.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

TEMPERANCE BAILEY

VA

Ancestor of Terry Whitcomb*

*deceased

In the early 1600's, Cecily Reynolds left Weymouth, England aboard the "Swan" and arrived in Jamestowne. It is purely my conjecture that she was a "good Country girl" without sufficient dowry and that she hoped for a better life as a servant in the new world. In Jamestowne, she was situated in the home of Captain Pierce and his wife Temperance, apparently in a fair and amiable relationship.

In 1615 Cecily married Thomas Bailey, one of the Governor's guards. He died in 1619. However, in 1617, a daughter, Temperance, was born to them and named for their employer's wife. Therefore, at a young age, little Temperance inherited and was allowed to keep and work 200 acres of tobacco land at a site in Henrico County called "Bailey's Point".



Bailey's Point

www.rosegill.com

Temperance married Richard Cocke from Shropshire, England (1602-1665). Temperance died in 1652 and is buried in Charles City, Virginia. My ancestors lived in that area until 1819 when they moved west to Kentucky where they reside still.

I am not only proud of the Colonial Dames and the tasks they conclude and my country, but of being a descendent of a working woman who shouldered agricultural responsibilities. As a career woman and the mother of six career women, I feel that we owe a great deal to Temperance Bailey – and to the Colonial Dames.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

ROBERT BOLLING*

VA

Ancestor of Wendy Angel, Mimi Ewens, Laurel Messer and Marion Smith*

** deceased*

Colonel Robert Bolling I was born in London on Boxing Day, 26 December 1646. Were they celebrating that day then? Were they even celebrating Christmas, with the Royalists fighting the Roundheads? When he came to the new world, it was to Virginia. He settled in Prince George County, and eventually built and named his estate "Kippax." How to find out the derivation of that name? And how did he get to be a Colonel? He was a Burgess from Charles City County in 1688, 1691-2 and 1699, and later from Prince George County, 1704-5. He was sheriff of Charles City County in 1692. In 1705 he was appointed County Lieutenant of Prince George County. What did that entail?

His parents were John and Mary Carrie Bolling, and one or both of them were from Bradford, in Yorkshire, England. However, at some point they moved to London, for their children's births were registered in All Hallows, Barkin Parish, Tower Street. It is possible to visit this church, across from The Tower in London, and view these records on parchment. John and Mary probably had one previous son, John, baptized in 1644. Is it possible he came to America first?

Robert arrived in Virginia on 2 October 1660, at 15. Certainly he wasn't just a waif, because in 1675 he first married the granddaughter of Pocahontas, Jane Rolfe. At that time he was 29 and she was one wealthy woman, having inherited land from both her English grandfather, John Rolfe, and her Indian grandmother, Pocahontas. Jane bore him a son, John, born 27 January 1676/7, and then she died shortly after his birth.

Robert's second marriage was in 1681 to Anne Stith. She was the daughter of John Stith of Brunswick County, Virginia. They named their first son Robert (II). It is from this second marriage that we are descended.

The only portrait of him is very English. He gazes straight out with his head and right shoulder turned toward the viewer, his long hair curling at the shoulder. He is middle aged and has a slight double chin. Most noticeable is the silk scarf around his neck, an intricate paisley design. His heavy coat or cape is split near the shoulder revealing an elaborate sleeve. It would be fair to say his appearance is kindly and knowledgeable. The artist is unknown and the painting was probably done in England. It belongs to the College of William and Mary in Williamsburg, Virginia.



Robert Bolling
College of William & Mary

Robert survived to the age of 64 and died in his Kippax home near Petersburg, Virginia. His gravesite was later moved to the cemetery at Blandford, Virginia, famous for its Tiffany stained glass windows commemorating the Civil War Dead.

We are fortunate to learn so much about our ancestors, and to respect and admire their contributions to our country.

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

FRANCIS EPES

VA

Ancestor of Diane Young Bell

Francis Epes III, (1627-1720), was the third Virginian to bear his name. His grandfather Francis Epes I, was baptized 14 May 1597, as noted in the Parish Register, St Mary the Virgin, Ashford, Kent. We do not know when he came to Virginia, but he was a resident of Virginia before April 1625 when he was elected to sit in the Assembly at James City. His name is on a list of the "Names of the cheifest...planters that hath both ventured theire Lives & estates for the plantation of Virginia" residing in the Bodleian Library at Oxford University. His son Francis Epes II, was deposed on 8 July, 1677, stating that he was "aged 49 or thereabouts", putting his birth year at 1628. He variously served as a "Guard of the Counties", a justice of Henrico County, and Burgess. He rose to the rank of Colonel. A letter from Col. Herbert Jeffreys, the Governor of Virginia reported that "On the 22nd and 23rd of August(1678) some Indians came downe....The cheife officer Coll.(Francis) Epps...was kill'd....". He was dead by 28 August 1678. Col. Francis Epes married (1), about 1658, name unknown and (2), about 1661, Mrs. Elizabeth Worsham.

Francis Epes III was the only son of Col. Epes and his first wife. There has been some confusion about whether Elizabeth Worsham Epes was the mother of Francis Epes III. Mr. Dorman discusses Elizabeth's two wills, the first of which provided for her Worsham children, and the second those she had with Francis Epes II, namely William, Littlebury and Mary. In this second will, dated 23 September 1678, Elizabeth appointed her son-in-law (stepson) Francis Epes as executor. From his residence, he was known as Francis Epes of Bermuda Hundred. The spelling of this Hundred varied: 'Burmooda', 'Burmodii' (from Elizabeth's will).

Francis III married Anne Isham, daughter of Col. Henry Isham and his wife Katherine (Banks) Royall, Between 23 September 1678 and 20 February 1681/2. Francis and Anne had seven children: Isham, Francis, William, Anne, Eliabeth, Mary, and Sarah.

Francis Epes III was sworn as justice of the peace for Henrico County, 1 June 1683. He was also a burgess for the county numerous times between 1691 and 1711. He was appointed sheriff of the county in 1685, 1686, 1700, 1710 and 1711. He was a considerable landowner, receiving a number of land grants in Henrico County. In 1704 he owned 226 acres in Prince George County and 2,145 acres in Henrico County. His will was dated 2 October 1719 and probated 6 June 1720.

Source:

Ancestors and Descendants of Francis Epes I of Virginia (Epes-Eppes-Epps), volume I. Edited by John Frederick Donnan, and published by the Society of the Descendants of Francis Epes I of Virginia.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

WILLIAM FERRAR

VA

Ancestor of Mary Hollis Clark

Study shows there were two William Ferrars who came to America in 1618, on the ship Neptune. Although the ship was a large one with 200 passengers, the voyage was long and perilous, and many became ill and died.

The two Williams were kinsmen and both believed to be descendants of Henri Ferrer who came to England with William the Conqueror. (The Ferrer name evolved to Ferrar in England and later to Farrar in America). Some of Henri's descendants settled in Yorkshire, England where both Nicholas, Sr. and John of Croxton were born. The family became closely associated with the Virginia Company and instrumental in its growth. Nicholas, who lived in London before, moved his extended family to Little Gidding during the plague, where he restored the manor house and small church, and developed a religious community devoted to educating the local children.

We trace our ancestry to William, son of John Ferrer of the Yorkshire branch of the family. Both young men were evidently happy to be "sent out" to Virginia by their fathers, who were interested in the Colony, its inhabitants and the education of the Indians. Our William Ferrar (1594 - 1637) was soon given much responsibility including justice of Charles City and Henrico County. He was appointed administrator of the estate of his neighbor Samuel Jordan, and later married his widow Cecily Bayley Jordan.

They moved to Farrar's Island, farther up the James River on land, part of which was later developed as the site of Henrico town. The children of Captain William Ferrar were William and John. Their son, Colonel William Ferrar of Henrico County, Virginia first appears in any record as a patentee of land in 1637, having been granted by Governor Harvey 2,000 acres in Henrico, land due him for the transportation, at his own expense, of forty persons into the Colony.

Colonel William Farrar served in the Colonial Wars and as a member of the House of Burgess for Henrico County 1659-60 and 1675-76.

Note: Most of my information about William Ferrar comes from research done by three of my mother's sisters for Our Heritage--Illges and Barnett and Related Families, compiled and published in 1974 by the seven children of Abraham Illges and Mary Lou Barnett.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

THOMAS GRAVES

VA

Ancestor of Frances Buckley, arol Buckley, Maureen Buckley, and Patsy Teaff

One of the original Adventurers in the Virginia Company of London, Thomas Graves sailed into Jamestown as part of the second supply on the *Mary and Margaret* in October 1608. According to most accounts, he was approximately twenty-five years old and unmarried. In Captain John Smith's *Historie* he is listed as a gentleman and was designated as one of the Ancient Planters of Jamestown. He acquired the title "captain" after arriving in Jamestown and became a leader in the progress of this first permanent settlement in North America.

In 1619, Governor George Yeardly asked Graves to lead the Smythe's Hundred, one of the recently created private plantations. Graves, along with Walter Shelley, represented Smythe's Hundred (renamed Southampton Hundred) at the first meeting of the House of Burgesses, the oldest legislative assembly in America, on July 30, 1619. Later, from 1629-1630 and in 1632, he sat as a burgess for the plantation of Accomac, on the Eastern Shore. Graves was one of fifty-one settlers listed as living on the Eastern Shore in the census of 1623 (in 1635 he took command of local affairs), and his patent for two hundred acres was recorded in 1628. He became a commissioner for the Accomac plantation in 1632.

Graves became active with church affairs on the Eastern Shore; his name is at the top of the list of attendees when the first vestry meeting was held at Hungars Episcopal Church in September 1635. Either later that year or early in 1636, Graves died.

Survivors of Thomas Graves were his wife Katherine and children John, Thomas, Verlinda, Ann, Katherine, and Francis, our ancestor, who was born in Virginia. (Francis's daughter Clara Graves married Aaron Higginbotham, and our line of the family was formed.) The two older boys may have been born in England, where it is believed Graves married Katherine in 1610, on a return visit.

Thomas Graves was unique in two senses, first as an investor (many of whom did not venture to America) and second as someone who sailed to the New World. He was a political leader who had real adventures. Early on, Graves went on an expedition that led to his meeting Opechcancanough, Pocahontas' uncle. Ensign Thomas Savage, on orders from Captain John Smith, rescued him.

Sources:

Ames, Susie. *Studies of the Virginia Eastern Shore in the Seventeenth Century*. Richmond: The Dietz Press, 1940.

Boddie, John Bennett. *Southside Virginia Families*, Vol I. Redwood City, CA: Pacific Coast Publishers, 1955-56. 2v.

Coldham, Peter Wilson. *Complete Book of Emigrants, 1607-1660: A comprehensive listing compiled from English public records*, Vol I. Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., 1987

Doliente, Sharon J. *Maryland and Virginia Colonials: genealogies of some Virginia families*. Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., 1991.

Graves, Kenneth Vance. *Robert Graves of Anson County, North Carolina and Chesterfield County, South Carolina, Ancestors and Descendants (ca. 1580-1979): a branch of the descendants of Captain Thomas Graves, 1608 immigrant to Jamestown, Virginia*. Baltimore: Gateway Press, 1980.

Hatch, Charles E., Jr. *The First 17 Years: Virginia, 1607-1624*. Charlottesville: University Press of Virginia, 1987. Virginia 350th Anniversary Celebration.

Hening, William Waller. *The Statutes at Large; Being a collection of all the laws of Virginia, from the first session of the legislature, in the year 1619*. Richmond: Printed by and for Samuel Pleasants, junior, printer to the Commonwealth, 1809-23. 13v.

Hidden, P.W. "Graves Family of Essex County." *William and Mary Quarterly*, Vol XVI, 1936.

_____. "Graves Family of York County." *William and Mary Quarterly*, Vol XXI, 1941.

Leonard, Cynthia Miller. *The General Assembly of Virginia, July 30, 1619-January 11, 1978: a Bicentennial Register of Members*. Richmond: Virginia State Library, 1978.

Meyer, Virginia M. and John Frederick Dorman, (eds). *Adventurers of Purse and Person, Virginia (1607-1624/5)*. Third Edition. Alexandria: Order of First Families of Virginia, 1987.

Sweeny, William. "Captain Thomas Graves." *William and Mary Quarterly*. Vol XV, 1935.

The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography. Richmond, VA: Virginia Historical Society, 1893-. 11: 60, 70.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

BENJAMIN HARRISON I

VA

Ancestor of VickyEddy and Dorothea Rodimon

The first Benjamin Harrison in Virginia was born in 1605 in England. His father, John Harrison, was a shipmate and deputy to the appointed Mayor and Governor of Bermuda who died the day the *Sea Ventures* anchored in Bermuda waters. John Harrison became the Governor of the Colony of Bermuda for 1622 and 1623, until the arrival of the new Governor.

Whether Benjamin, a teenager, was in Bermuda at that time we do not know. However, he landed at Jamestown after the massacre of 1622, probably around 1627. He served as clerk of the County and was a member of the first House of Burgesses. Although he lived in Jamestown, he purchased land in Surry County, which his son Benjamin II used as "seed money" for extending the family fortunes.

Benjamin was buried in the Jamestown cemetery and while there is evidence of other graves in the cemetery, his is the oldest dated tombstone there.

Benjamin's wife was named Mary. Her maiden name does not appear on any surviving documents, which she signed with an "X." Therefore, one can assume that the demands of colonial life in the early sixteen hundreds left little time for the formal education of the female.

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

EDWARD HERNDON

VA

Ancestor of Ann Boyd*

*deceased

Edward Herndon was born in Virginia in 1700. He married first Elizabeth Stubblefield in King and Queen County, Virginia. After Elizabeth died, he married Mary Brock in 1737 in Spotsylvania County, Virginia. His children were Edward Herndon, John Herndon, Elizabeth Herndon and Joseph Herndon.

According to *Virginia County Records, Virginia Colonial Militia 1651-1 776*, edited by William Armstrong Crozier, and the *Spotsylvania Order Books, 1730-1738*, pp. 122, 123, and 125, Richard Phillips, Gent., Lieutenant and Edward Herndon, Gent., Cornet, produced their commissions and took the oath, etc. as officers to a Troop of Horse under Captain William Waller on 1 November 1737. Edward Herndon, Gent. was commissioned as Lieutenant of a Troop of Horse, commanded by Captain Richard Tutt, and took the oath on 5 March 1744.

Edward Herndon sold land and a plantation to George Stubblefield, as attested in Stubblefield's will proved in Spotsylvania on 2 June 1752. Herndon died in 1759, at least seven years after this sale took place.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

AARON HIGGINBOTHAM

VA

Ancestor of Carol Buckley and Maureen Buckley

Records of a number of Higginbothams have been found in Cheshire and Lancashire, England. Early on they ventured to the British West Indies and settled in St. Philip Parish, Barbados. John Higginbotham is thought to have ventured to Boston and, heading south, met the Irish-born lass Frances Riley in Maryland. They married and settled in Virginia, in Albemarle County (which, when split, formed Amherst County), set in the eastern foothills of the Blue Ridge Mountains. About 1715 or 1720 (sources vary), Frances gave birth to a strapping lad, Aaron. No later than 1746, it is believed, Aaron married Clara Graves; they had six surviving children, of whom Aaron Jr. is our progenitor. From details in the senior Aaron Higginbotham's will, dated 1772, it seems he spent much of the mid-18th century amassing hundreds of acres of farmland around the Buffalo River, a watershed of the James River and a tributary of the Tye. (Tobacco was the main crop in the area, and even in mid-20th century, on a visit to our great grandparents' farm in the area, we could see the curing barn still standing.) It appears Aaron Sr. was well respected, because Virginia military records show that he was commissioned as a captain in the Amherst County Virginia Militia on August 7, 1769.

One source notes that Aaron Sr. was also a church warden and vestryman of Lexington Parish in Amherst County. This fits the picture of militiamen during the time between securing the colony and fighting for freedom. In the early 1770s militias were mostly occupied with keeping order. Information has not come to light about Captain Aaron Higginbotham's actions as part of the militia, but by 1775 things were heating up, and in the ensuing seven years, the militia served to suppress loyalists and indeed to guard prisoners held in Charlottesville. Militia became feeders for the full-time Virginia military, and militiamen also took up the slack for the military, finding supplies and even herding cattle. As fighting encroached, Amherst militiamen participated in major battles, reportedly even serving under the Marquis de Lafayette in 1781. When General Washington and Comte Rochambeau arrived, many Amherst militia fought among the regular military in the Battle of Yorktown, the decisive fight in the war for freedom that further enhanced the prospects of a President Washington.

Perhaps Captain Aaron Higginbotham was there.

In any case, it is believed he died just four years later. His will was proved (or probated) in 1785. It is thought he died a widower; Clara Graves Higginbotham is presumed to have died about 1780.

There are two details relating to Aaron Higginbotham Sr. that we are ashamed of: 1) that the militia were used to fight Indians and quell slavery uprisings 2) that in his will he reveals that he had slaves. We know that we have to accept that our ancestors were essentially conquerors, and maybe he didn't even fight Indians. We are very sorry if he was involved in punishing slaves for rising up. In his will, he does give names to his slaves, but he talks about their future children as "increase," and the way he bequeaths them in the same way as a horse seems inhumane. Also, by giving a female slave to his daughter, for example, and including the slave's increase, he was endorsing the perpetuity of an evil system. This is the perplexing part about many of our colonial ancestors. They fought for freedom while standing on the backs of other human beings.

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

ANTHONY HOSKINS
VA
Ancestor of Ernestine Cox Peak

Anthony Hoskins was born about 1613, probably in England. While there were several other Hoskins names in Virginia at the time he has not been identified positively with any predecessors. He may have been the son of Nicholas and Temperance Hoskins. Nicholas, "an ancient planter" came to Virginia on the *Edwin* in 1616 and Temperance came on the *Jonathan* in 1620. She married Nicholas by 1624 since he was listed on 16 Feb 1624 as head of a household on Old Plantation Creek with wife Temperance and daughter Margaret. In 1627 Nicholas Hoskins of Accomack, a yeoman, obtained a twenty-acre leasehold, part of a defunct Virginia Company property on the Eastern Shore. He also had a land patent on 3 Feb 1626. However, there was a likely father in an Anthony Hoskins who, as a 39 year old servant to Lady Delaware, testified before Chancery Court in England concerning Lady Delaware's possessions in Jamestown. In 1637 he bought a shallop for Edward Walker and Co. and in 1639 Anthony Hoskins was ordered to pay Mr. Floyd 200 lbs. of tobacco for a boat he lost (Virginia Colonial Abstracts, Vol. I, Accomack Co., 1637-1640). In 1640 he received a license to keep an ordinary on the Eastern Shore in Accomack County. These items come from the McCartney biographical dictionary and it is possible that some of them apply to the younger Anthony. They both resided in the same area.

On 12 Oct 1652, Anthony patented 700 acres in Northampton County on the Pongotege Creek. He transported fourteen persons for that including Alice Hoskins and an Anthony Hoskins. He also acquired 400 acres in Northampton County on 11 Mar 1653 for the transport of eight people. He was an inhabitant of Northampton Co in 1651 and on 11 March of that year he signed an oath of fidelity to the Commonwealth and he came to represent Northampton County, Virginia in the House of Burgess in April-May of 1652. A William Jones was a representative from Northampton at the same time as Anthony and it appears that he was the father of Joyce Jones whom Anthony married.

Anthony was a widower when he married Joyce Jones but we do not know who the first wife was. Joyce was born in England about 1626 or 28. She came to Accomack with her father in 1635. Her father was Captain William Jones who was born in England and married an Elizabeth who died there. He married again but her name is unknown. Joyce married Anthony about 1642 in Accomack County.

In the early months of 1663 the first courts of Accomack were held in the home of Anthony Hoskins and later at the home or tavern of Thomas Fowkes.

Joyce and Anthony had two daughters, Elizabeth and Ann. Elizabeth is the one from whom I am descended. She married Cornelius Wood in Rappahannock County and he died about 1678. By 14 Apr 1681 she married William Jett who died in 1698. They left three sons and a daughter Mary. Their son, John, born in 1685, continued my line of descent. Elizabeth died soon after her husband in 1699 in Richmond County. Her daughter Mary administered her estate.

After Anthony's death his widow, Joyce, married three more times. An abstract of Anthony's will refers to his will and his widow's pre-marital agreement with Alexander Fleming of Rappahannock County. They had two daughters, Alexia and Elizabeth Fleming. Joyce had brought her two daughters from the prior marriage with her, Elizabeth and Anne Hoskins. Captain Fleming died in 1668 leaving his estate to Joyce and their two Fleming daughters. Joyce's next husband, Lawrence Washington, was born in 1635 in England and died in 1677 in Old Rappahannock Co. and is buried at Wakefield beside his brother, John. His first wife remained in England with their daughter, Mary. The daughter remained there after her mother died. Joyce and Lawrence had a son, John and a daughter Ann Washington. Next, Joyce married James Yates whom she predeceased. Apparently there were no children since his 1685 will lists no wife or children. Her son, John Washington claimed that Yates went through most of Joyce's wealth. We must assume that Joyce Jones Hoskins Fleming Washington Yates died between 1677 and 1685.

John Jett, son of Elizabeth Hoskins and William Jett married Gladis Spillman and had Peter Jett who married Rebecca Pratt Bowen. Peter and Rebecca had Susannah Jett who married Ensign Francis Payne. Their son, Francis married Patsy Withers and they had my great-grandfather, Dr. Amos Payne. Amos married Elizabeth Barton Smith and they had Amos, Jr. My mother, Lula Ernestine Payne was one of their daughters. She was born in 1888 and died in 1965.

References:

Jett, Jeter Lee, *The Jett and Allied Families*. (Baltimore: Gateway Press, Inc., 1977)
Martha W. McCartney, *Virginia Immigrants and Adventurers, 1607-1637*,
Biographical Dictionary, p. 393.
L.R. McIlwaine, ed. *Journal of the House of Burgesses of Virginia 1619-1658/59*. Richmond VA
MCMXXV. Court Order Book 1619-1678.
Nottingham Stratton, *Wills and Administrations, Accomack County, VA 1663-1800*. (Baltimore,
Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc. 1999) p.2.
Marshall, James Handley Marshall, *Abstracts of the Wills and Administrations of Northampton
County, Virginia, 1632-1802*, (Camden, MA, Picton Press)
Nugent, Nell Marion, *Cavaliers and Pioneers, Patent Book No.3, Volume One*, p. 264.
Standard's Colonial Virginia Register, pp.68-69,
Martha W. McCartney, *Virginia Immigrants and Adventurers, 1607-1635, A Biographical Dictionary*,
p.393.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

FRANCIS MASON
VA
Ancestor of Marion Freeman

In 1613, my ancestor, Lieutenant Francis Mason, born about 1595, came to Virginia in the *John and Francis* with his first wife, Mary. They settled in New Norfolk County.

After Mary died, he married Alice, who had come to Virginia in the *Margett and John* in 1622. In the 1624 muster, Francis and Alice were listed along with a son, Francis who was born in Virginia, and five servants. Their plantation consisted of 1250 acres and was named "Hog Pen Point." He was named in An Act of Assembly in 1639 as a tobacco viewer.

He was a Justice and member of the first Court held in Lower Norfolk, qualified as sheriff in 1647, was a church warden and a member of the Vestry of Elizabeth River Parish.

He is listed as one of the Founding Fathers of Virginia and at his death left three children: Ann, Lemuel, and Elizabeth. They are all listed in Order of First Families of Virginia.

I find it amusing that my husband is named Mason; two of my children and two grandchildren have Mason in their name. I knew nothing of the Mason name until my papers for Colonial Dames were researched. Mason is a beloved name in Richmond, Virginia.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

GEORGE MASON III
VA
Ancestor of Florence Weltzheimer

George Mason III was about 27 years old at the time of his father's death. He was already a man of standing and property in the Potomac area. Family tradition has assigned 1690 as the year of his birth. This date is supported by a transcript of an entry from the lost family Bible, which stated that he was forty-five years old when he drowned in the Potomac in 1735.

Before 1716, by deed of gift from his father, he had acquired large tracts of land on Doegs' Neck and on both sides of Chopawamsic Creek. After his father's death he inherited other lands between Pohick Creek and Accotink Run, lands along Little Hunting Creek, and lands in Charles County, Maryland.

George Mason III succeeded to many of the offices his father had held; on 25 April 1713, he was appointed to the lucrative and much sought-after office of sheriff of Stafford County, to which he was reappointed in 1714. On 8 December 1715 Governor Alexander Spotswood appointed him county lieutenant and commander in chief of the militia of Stafford County. He was thereafter Colonel George Mason.

The freeholders of Stafford County sent Mason as their representative to the House of Burgesses, and he duly made his appearance in Williamsburg on 3 August 1715. He was appointed to the Committee for Propositions and Grievances and was one of a body who presented an address to the governor at the close of the session.

Mason's official duties brought him into frequent contact with Governor Alexander Spotswood, with whom he shared a combination of practical sagacity and a desire for high adventure. He was a member of the expedition led by Spotswood in the summer of 1716 across the Blue Ridge down into the valley of the Shenandoah. The expedition consisted of Governor Spotswood, several Virginia gentlemen, twelve rangers and four Indian guides. They rendezvoused at Germana, in the backcountry of the upper Rapidan, where Mason joined them, and then headed for the distant mountains, cutting their way through trackless underbrush and forest up the Rapidan to Swift Run Gap and along the meanders of Elk Run to the Shenandoah. The Governor buried a bottle with a piece of paper inside it "on which he writ that he took possession of the place in the name of and for King George the First of England." They struggled to the summit of the highest mountain in sight, and there, after a good dinner, "drank the King's health in Champagne, and fired a volley." The explorers turned back early in September.

Like his father before him, George Mason III was a somewhat reluctant Burgess. He was reelected a member of the House of Burgesses in 1718, and during this session served on a committee concerned with the building of the Governor's Palace. For absenting himself from the sittings of the House of Burgesses he earned a public reprimand by giving only frivolous reasons for his absence. Apart from some purely formal duties, he appeared principally on the records of the House as requesting permission to go into the country during periods when the House was in session.

Returned again in 1720, Colonel Mason served on the Committee on Public Claims. He performed the same duty in the 1722 and 1723 sessions.

No record remains of how or when Ann Thomson and Colonel Mason met, but meet they did, and in 1721 they were married. George and Ann Mason had three children. George Mason IV, their eldest son, was born 11 December 1725 at Doegs' Neck at the house known as Newton overlooking what is now called Gunston Cover. Colonel Mason later moved with his family to Charles County,

Maryland, to Christian Temple Manor, on Chickamuxon Creek, where their daughter Mary Thomson was born in 1731. Mason still used the house at Chopawamsic Creek in Stafford County as an occasional residence, and Thomson Mason, youngest of the family, was born there on 14 August 1733.

In the last years of his life Colonel Mason entered into an agreement with the vestry of Durham of Nanjemoy Parish in Charles County for building a new church there. On 5 March 1735 Colonel Mason attempted to cross the Potomac in his sloop. The vessel overturned and he was drowned. He was buried at Newtown. Ann Mason contracted with John Hobson to complete the structure. Since Old Durham Church, located in modern Welcome, was begun in 1732, it is highly probable that Colonel Mason had a good deal to do with the design and the construction of the handsome old brick church before his tragic death made it necessary for Hobson to complete it.

Above, is a brief mention of George III's firstborn son, George IV, born in 1725. We know George Mason IV much better as the builder of Gunston Hall, the author of the Virginia Declaration of Rights and one of the framers of the United States Constitution. In 1912, his home, Gunston Hall, was deeded to the Commonwealth of Virginia to be administered by The National Society of the Colonial Dames of America.



Gunston Hall
www.gunstonhall.com

GUNSTON HALL

Gunston Hall (1755-1759) is the architectural gem built for George Mason IV by William Buckland and William Bernard Sears. The mansion stands as a testament to a single architectural moment in colonial Virginia. After its completion in 1759, few changes were made. As a result, Gunston Hall remains as a vital example of the Georgian style washed upon Virginia's shores. The two English craftsmen, Buckland and Sears, brought with them the styles popularized in London with Sears's skill in carving and Buckland's designs derived in part from source books. They produced eclectic interiors that illustrated the full spectrum of the English Rococo including a Central Passage with "French Modern" and Neoclassical elements, a porch in the "Gothik" style, and two public rooms—one in the "Chinese Taste" and the other containing elements of Palladianism. These two men also produced the furniture for the "Chinese" Room—a rare feature for the period. In addition to importing talent from England, Mason also purchased English furnishings for use in the mansion. The sheer number of Mason pieces provides a vivid picture of what Gunston Hall looked like when the family lived there from 1759 to 1792.



References:

Copeland, Pamela C. and Richard K. MacMaster. The Five George Masons, Patriots and Planters of Virginia and Maryland. Published for the Board of Regents, Gunston Hall by the University Press of Virginia, Charlottesville.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

JOHN PAGE

VA

Ancestor of Mary Ruyle

John Page (April 28, 1743 – October 11, 1808) was a figure in early United States history. He served in the U.S. Congress and as the 13th Governor of Virginia.

Page was born and lived at Rosewell Plantation in Gloucester County. He was the son of Alice (Grymes) and Mann Page. His great-great-grandfather was Colonel John Page (1628–1692), an English merchant from Middlesex who emigrated to Virginia with his wife Alice Lucken Page and settled in Middle Plantation. He was the brother of Mann Page III.



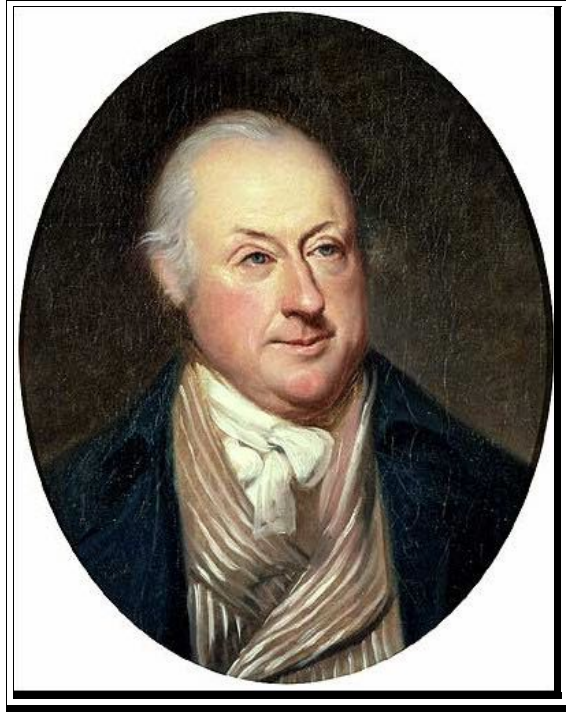
Governor John Page House, Williamsburg VA

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:Governor_John_Page_house_Williamsburg.jpg

John Page graduated from the [College of William and Mary](#) in 1763, where he was a friend and closest college classmate of [Thomas Jefferson](#), having exchanged a great deal of correspondence.

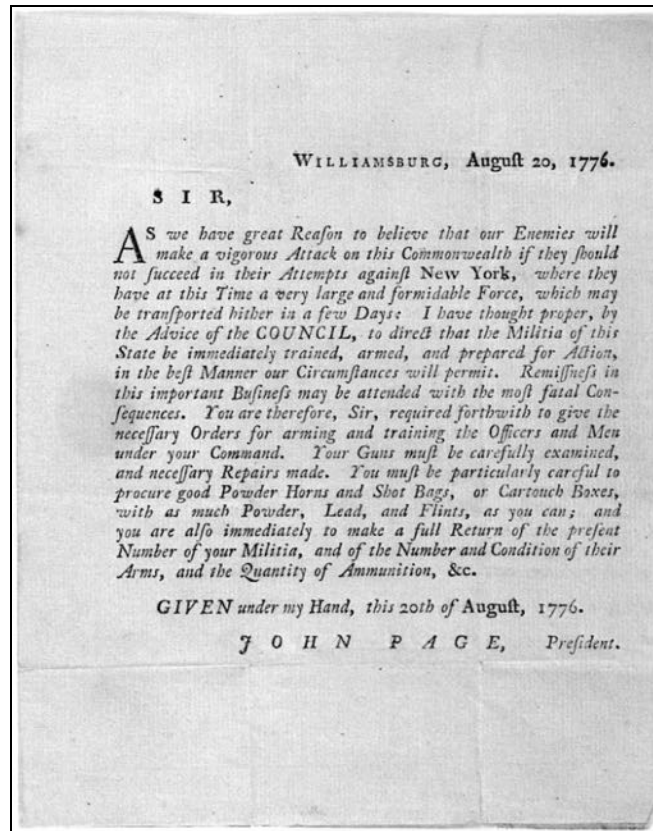
He then served under [George Washington](#) in an expedition during the [French and Indian War](#). He was a delegate to the [state constitutional convention](#) in 1776. He also served during the [American Revolutionary War](#) as an officer in the Virginia state militia, raising a regiment from Gloucester County and supplementing it with personal funds. During that war, he attained the rank of colonel.

Page was also involved in politics. He became the [Lieutenant Governor of Virginia](#) and served 1776-1779. He was then a member of the [Virginia House of Delegates](#) 1781-1783 and 1785 - 1788. Page was elected to the [First United States Congress](#) and reelected to the [Second](#) and [Third](#), and to the [Fourth](#) as a [Republican](#). Overall, he was Congressman from March 4, 1789 to March 3, 1797. After his terms in Congress, he was again a member of the Virginia House of Delegates in 1797, 1798, 1800, and 1801. He became the [Governor of Virginia](#) in 1802 and served to 1805.



John Page
13th Governor of Virginia

After being governor, he was appointed United States commissioner of loans for Virginia and held office until his death in Richmond, Virginia on October 11, 1808.



Broadside, order by John Page, president of the council, ordering state militia to be trained and prepared for battle, 20 August 1776

[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Page_\(Virginia_politician\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Page_(Virginia_politician))

He was interred in St. John's Churchyard in Richmond.

John Page was married to the early American poet, Margaret Lowther Page (1759-1835), who was host to a vibrant literary salon at the Rosewell Plantation. John Page himself was also a poet who wrote several poems about national political issues, including Shay's rebellion and the Virginia Religious Disestablishment Act (Virginia Statute for Religious Freedom).

Governor Page was quoted by [George W. Bush](#) in his inaugural address in 2001. Writing to his friend Jefferson shortly after the [Declaration of Independence](#) was published, Page said of the Declaration and the Revolution: "We know the race is not to the swift nor the battle to the strong. Do you not think an angel rides in the whirlwind and directs this storm

- http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:Governor_John_Page

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

RICHARD PACE

VA

Ancestor of Stephanie Jewett Swift

My ancestor was Richard Pace of Jamestown Virginia. Richard and his wife Isabella Pace were among the noble class of England. The exact time of the arrival of Richard and Isabella has not been determined. It is not known on which ship they sailed. Richard and Isabella were given a land grant in Jamestown. Persons who were given these grants were required to be in the colony prior to 1616. However it has not been explained why Richard and Isabella were given a grant in 1620. They took their grant across the James River from the Jamestown Fort. Their plantation was known as Paces Paines. Not much is known of the personalities of Richard and Isabella Pace. He was evidently a very good man as he risked his life to warn the Jamestown settlers of the impending Indian massacre. Some genealogists picture Isabella as a sharp-tongued, gossiping woman. Court records of Jamestown show that she appeared as a witness in trials of witches and other scandalous crimes of the colony. (1)



Old Muddy James and the Flow of History

<http://www.colonialwilliamsburg.com>

At the site of Pace's Paines, Richard and Isabella became key participants in the event that was to be known as the "First Massacre". At about 3 AM on March 22, 1622, an Indian boy named Chanco, who lived with the Pace family and who had been instructed in Christianity, revealed to Richard Pace that at breakfast time there would be a colony-wide uprising against the English. The Indians who had been accepted throughout the colony and were living among and working with the English had been instructed by Chief Opechancanough to rise at that hour, to seize whatever weapons were at hand and to kill all of the English. Pace, hearing this warning immediately took his boat three miles across the James to Jamestown arriving in time to warn and save the capitol of the colony from the fury of the uprising that killed 347 of approximately 1200 colonists in Virginia.

After the massacre and a half year's stay under the protection of Jamestown, Pace sought and received permission to return to Pace's Paines and to strengthen it so that he and other men would be able to live safely there. The records show that Pace had also held shares in a plantation which had been planned to be set on the Chickahominy River after the massacre but that he preferred to stay at Pace's Paines. (2)

Sources:

- (1) Pace. One of America's Earliest Emigrant Families. compiled by Noble Hamilton Pace Sr., Columbus, Mississippi
- (2) Jamestown Society. the Internet

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

ALEXANDER PARKER
VA
Ancestor of Diane Shepherd

Dr. Alexander Parker was born about 1690 in Westmoreland Co VA. He was the husband of Susannah (Harwar)) Parker. They were the parents of Richard Parker and William Parker. Dr. Alexander Parker died about November 1751 in Essex Co VA.

Alexander Parker was a leading Essex gentlemen, appointed by the government at Williamsburg. He served as a trustee of Tappahannock in the 1740's. William Daingerfield, William Beverley, Dr. Alexander Parker, and Benjamin Robinson were among the trustees who directed the sale of the half acre town lots. (Ref: Slaughter, History of Essex Co., VA.).

Alexander is also referenced at the Library of Virginia, Virginia Wills and Administration (per Internet), Parker, Alexander, 1751. Will Book No. 9, 1750-1754 (Reel 45), p. 106-109: Will probated 19 November 1751 & 21 July 1572. pg. 110-111: Exors. bond rec. 19 Nov 1751. Part of index to Essex County Wills and Administrations (1692-1800) Essex County, VA.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

CAPTAIN JOHN PHELPS

VA

Ancestor of Sarah Rogers

John Phelps entered his first session as a burgess with fellow freshman Peter Jefferson of Albemarle County, father of future Declaration of Independence author, Thomas Jefferson. (Thomas Jefferson later represented Albemarle County in the House of Burgesses from 1769-1774). It is likely that Phelps was already acquainted with the family; in 1749 he was sworn in as Justice of the Peace and Justice of the Chancery with Field Jefferson, uncle of Thomas Jefferson in Lunenburg County. The two also served as Vestrymen in the Parish of Cumberland. In addition to Jefferson, Phelps also served in the House of Burgesses with Augustine Washington of Westmoreland County, father of George Washington. He served in the company of many Virginians who would later become leaders of the American Revolution: Peyton Randolph, Virginia Attorney General and later first president of the Continental Congress; Benjamin Harrison-ae-'eey" in Charles City County and George Wythe of Williamsburg both signers of the Declaration of Independence and both representatives to the Continental Congress; Richard Bland of Prince George County, also a member of the Continental Congress.

The seeds of discontent with the Crown and fuel for the American Revolutionary War were sewn in the ears immediately preceding the dissolution of the House of Burgesses in 1769. The last session John Phelps served in the House of Burgesses, August 5, 1755, was marked by an incident that proved to be a harbinger of the French and Indian War. Virginia militia Colonel James Patton of Augusta County was killed by Indians on his way home from the previous session held May 1, 1755.

On August 20, 1756 John Phelps was commissioned to command a Company of Rangers to be raised in Bedford County to protect the settlers from the French and Indians in the area. There is also evidence to suggest that six years prior to his Ranger commission, John Phelps and other "Gentlemen" of Lunenburg County were sworn in as "Captains of the Foot in this County". For their service in "...the defence and protection of the frontier of this colony, against the incursions and depredations of the French and their Indian allies" members of the Militia of the County of Bedford were paid in September 1758. Capt. John Phelps received the sum of 2.80 pounds for his service. 1758-Bedford Co., VA-September 1758-32d George II."Money paid to the Militia of the County of Bedford, and for Provisions furnished by sundry inhabitants of the said county, viz. To John Phelps, as captain (2.8.0 pounds)."

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

WILLIAM RANDOLPH
VA
Ancestor of Julia Samaniego

William Randolph (bapt. 7 November 1650 – 11 April 1711) was a colonist and land owner who played an important role in the history and government of the English colony of Virginia. He moved to Virginia sometime between 1669 and 1673, and married Mary Isham (ca. 1659 – 29 December 1735) a few years later. His descendants include many prominent individuals including Thomas Jefferson, John Marshall, Robert E. Lee, Peyton Randolph, Edmund Randolph, John Randolph of Roanoke, George W. Randolph and Edmund Ruffin. Genealogists have taken an interest in him for his progeny's many marital alliances, referring to him and Mary Isham as "the Adam and Eve of Virginia".

Background

William Randolph was baptized in Moreton Morrell, Warwickshire, England on 7 November 1650, the son of Richard Randolph (21 February 1621–2 May 1678) and Elizabeth Ryland (1625–ca. 1669). Richard Randolph was originally from Houghton Parva, a small village east of Northampton, where his father was a "steward and servant" to Edward la Zouche, 11th Baron Zouche (1556–1625), having previously served in that same capacity to Sir George Goring, a landowner in Sussex. Elizabeth was the daughter of John Ryland of Warwick. William was the second of seven Randolph children, all born in Moreton Morrell between 1647 and 1657.

No record has yet surfaced to fix William Randolph's residences after his birth until 1672.

Although his father's older half-brother, the poet Thomas Randolph, attended Westminster School and Cambridge University, he did so largely on scholarship and there is no record of any other members of William's family having attended either public school or university. At some point in the late 1650s or 1660s, his parents moved to Dublin, where they both died, his mother around 1669 and his father in 1671, so William may well have spent the bulk of his formative years in Ireland. It is also known that William's uncle, Henry Randolph (1623–?), in 1669 traveled to Britain from Virginia, to which place he had emigrated around 1642. Henry probably encouraged his nephew at that time to return with him to the Chesapeake. In any case, William Randolph was in the colony by 12 February 1672 when he appears in the record as witness to a land transaction.

Early career

The Chesapeake economy was centered around tobacco, grown within the English mercantile system for export to markets in Britain and Europe. Randolph appears to have arrived in the province with little capital and few transatlantic connections. One historian suggests that he started off in the colony as an "undertaker" building houses, but there is no evidence for it. By 1674 he had acquired enough money to import 12 persons into the colony and thereby earned his first of many land patents (between 1674 and 1697 he imported 72 servants and 69 slaves for which he collected patents for more than 7000 acres). In later years Randolph became a merchant and a planter, and co-owned several ships used to transport tobacco to England and goods back to Virginia. He established several of his sons as merchants and ship captains.

Around 1675 he married Mary Isham (1660 Bermuda Hundred, James River, Henrico County, Virginia–25 December 1735 Turkey Island, Henrico County, Virginia), whose father, Henry Isham (c. 1628 Pytchley, Northamptonshire–c. 1676 Bermuda Hundred, James River, Henrico County, Virginia), was from a gentry family in Northamptonshire. After arriving in Virginia, Henry had married in 1659, a wealthy widow, Katherina Banks Royall (c. 1630 Canterbury, Kent–aft. 1 December 1686 Henrico County, Virginia).

Property

Randolph acquired property by purchase, headright, marital interest and land grant. His early acquisitions were in the neighborhood of Turkey Island, located in the James River about 20 miles (32 km) southeast of present-day Richmond. This land had been settled for decades, and was held by several owners, from whom he purchased. Possibly his first purchase was 591 acres (2.39 km²) of land on Swift Creek, south of the James.

In 1676 a Virginia colonist, Nathaniel Bacon, rebelled unsuccessfully against the colonial government and

his estate was forfeited. This was Curles, located near Turkey Island. Randolph made an assessment of the property for Governor Berkeley and was allowed to buy it for his estimated price, adding 1,230 acres (5.0 km²) to Randolph's previous land holdings.^[12] This conflict of interest was criticized by his neighbors. In 1678 Mary Isham's brother died, making her the heiress to her father's large estate. William Randolph had married her before her brother's death, because the brother's will refers to her as "Mary Randolph".

Around 1700, when Randolph's political career was at its peak, he received land grants to almost 10,000 acres (40 km²) of newly-opened land near Richmond; a 3,256-acre (13.18 km²) tract at Tuckahoe Creek and a 5,142-acre (20.81 km²) plot at Westham. This land became the basis of the Tuckahoe and Dungeness Plantations, which were later founded by two of William Randolph's sons.

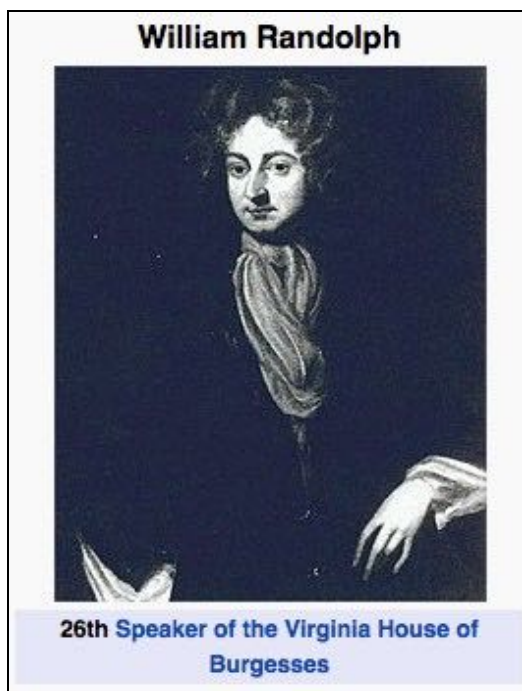
William Randolph owned a considerable number of slaves. This reflected the rise of slavery during his business career. Around 1675 Governor Berkeley reported the population of the colony as 40,000, with 4,000 indentured servants and 2,000 slaves. But as the supply of indentured servants declined late in the 17th century, the planters turned to slaves for work in the labor-intensive tobacco cultivation.

It is difficult to determine the acreage or number of slaves he owned at his death. His will has been transcribed and a copy appears on the internet, but portions are missing. One estimate is that he had 20,000 acres (81 km²). He paid property taxes on 1,655 acres (6.70 km²) in Surry County and 19,465 acres (78.77 km²) in Henrico County in 1704.

Political and social activities

Randolph held multiple official appointments. At the local level, he became clerk of Henrico County Court in 1673 and held the position until he was asked to serve as a Justice of the peace in 1683. He also served as sheriff and coroner.

Randolph represented Henrico County in every assembly of the House of Burgesses from 1684 to 1698, was Speaker of the House of Burgesses in 1698, and was the Clerk of the House from 1699 to 1702. He fell ill in August 1702 and his son, William, took his place. Randolph resigned the clerkship completely in March 1703.



Randolph was a founder and one of the first trustees of the College of William and Mary. His son, John Randolph, secured a royal charter for the College on one of several trips to London to conduct business

for the colony.

Randolph was a friend of William Byrd, and he served as an advisor to Byrd's sons during their political careers. He is mentioned in one of Byrd's diaries as "Colonel Randolph", his militia title.

Randolph built a mansion on the Turkey Island plantation on high ground overlooking the island and the river. It featured a ribbed dome and was known as the "Bird's Cage".

-http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William_Randolph

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

GEORGE READE

VA

Ancestor of Louise Claridge Wilson Everett

George Reade was born in Linkenholt Manor, Hampshire, England on 25 October 1608. He came to Jamestown, Virginia in 1637, and served as Acting Governor in 1638. He married Elizabeth Martiau in 1641. From 1640 to 1642 he served as Secretary of the Colony. He became a Burgess from James City County in 1649, and a Burgess from Charles (York) County in 1656; and in 1658 he was appointed to the Council for the rest of his life.

He served as a colonel of the militia and was a successful planter and plantation owner with lands on the south side of the Peanketanke River and along the Potomac River. George Reade died in 1674. He and his wife Elizabeth are buried at Grace Episcopal Church in Yorktown, Virginia.

Elizabeth's father, Nicolas Martiau, was a French Huguenot who became naturalized by British royal decree. Nicolas Martiau became a member of the Virginia Company and arrived in Jamestown in 1620 and died in Yorktown, Virginia in 1657. Educated as a military engineer, he built numerous fortifications at several strategic locations including the fort at York and the high log palisade between the headwaters of College and Queen Creeks.

He was a successful planter and plantation owner, a member of the House of Burgesses, a justice of the Court of York, and in 1635 became a leader in the removal of the tyrannical Governor John Harvey, one of the first political oppositions in the colonies.

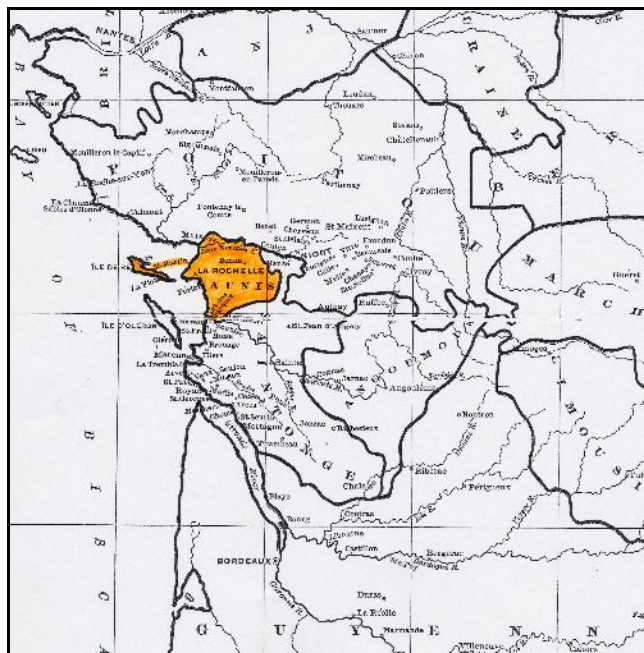
On 14 March 1639, Nicolas Martiau patented the first land along the York River. Benjamin Reade, one of Elizabeth and George's sons, inherited the Martiau plantation and in 1691 sold fifty acres to the Crown for the purpose of creating the "Towne of Yorke," now Yorktown, Virginia.

[Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors](#)

[Return to Biographies Listed by Colony](#)

ABRAHAM SALLEE
VA
Ancestor of Mary Anne Curtis Curray

Birth: bp. 25 Feb 1674, St. Martins, Isle of Re, Aunis, France
Death: will proven Mar 1719, King William Parish, Henrico Co (Now Goochland Co) VA



St. Martin, Isle of Re, Province of Aunis, France

Calendar of Virginia State Papers & Other Manuscripts, 1652-1781, Vol. 1, arranged and edited by Wm. P. Palmer, M.D., Richmond: 1875.

p. 112:

April 1st At a Court held in Varina, for the County of Henrico, the first day of April, 1707--

Prest:

John Worsham, Joseph Royall, Richard Cocke, Abra. Salle, George Worsham, Tho. Jefferson, Gents.

1707 Anthony Robinson & M^r John Dofwell, Church wardens of Charles parrish, in Yorke County, to be held for ye consulting about ye Reparing or Building of a Church in ye Aforesaid Parrish; And in order to agree about ye businefs aforesd, there mett Eight Vestry men of Each of ye two Percints, but ye Vestry men of ye Lower Percinct did, without Giveing any good Reason, muterously voat among y^{mselves}, yt two of ye uper percinct vestry men should not act any Longer as vestry men; soe yt the remainder of ye said vestry of ye upper Percinct would serve noe Longer untill they had humbly moved to your honners yt your honners would be so gracious for to order that they should have ye Rite and privildg yt ye Lower percinct of ye said parrish have in being Equall in number of Vestry men as they have.

May it Plese your honners, your Petitioners Humbly Praye yt your Honners be so Gracious as to order yt ye Vestry men of each percinct to stand as formerly and be Qualified accordin to Law, or Elce yt your Honners would Reduce our Vestry to ye number of Twelve, according as ye Law Derecks, and those twelve to be Qualified according to Law, soe yt Buseneff of ye Parrish aforesaid may not be neglected, and your Petitioners shall, In Duty bound, Ever Pray.

THD. CHISMAN, Secy.,
HENRY HAYWARD,
JOHN ———,
HENRY HAYWARD,
JNO. DOSWELL, SNE^r,
JNO. DOSWELL, JNR., Ch. W^d.

March 19th At a Court held at Southwark, for the County of Surry, 19th of March, 1707.

Present, her Ma^{ties} Justices—

Capt William Browne, M^r Joseph John Jackman, and M^r Ethered Taylor, are severally recommended for those of Sheriff of this County for the enfueing year

Test :
FRA. CLEMENTS, Clk. Cort.

April 1st At a Court held at Varina, for the County of Henrico, the first day of Aprill, 1707—

Prest :

John Worsham, Joseph Royall, Richard Cocke, **Abra. Salle**, George Worsham, Tho. Jefferson, Gents.

Sheriff recommended In obedience to an Act of Assembly made the 23^d day of October, 1705, Intituled an Act, prescribing the method of appointing Sherriffs, &c., This Court do humbly recommend Coll. William Randolph, Lt. Coll. Francis Epes & Maj^r Willam Farrar, (being Justices in this County) as most fitt and able persons to Execute the office of Sherriff in the said County this present year.

JAMES COCKE, Clk. Cort.

April 5th Deed of Release from Thomas Pannell to Rich^d Buckner, for certain lands lying & being on Mottaponi River, or main runn in King &

Calendar of State Papers

The Huguenot, Publication No. 28 1977-1979, The Huguenot Society of the Founders of Manakin in the Colony of Virginia, Inc., 1947.

pp. 114-117:

SOME **SALLE** FAMILY DATA

Floyd B. Bolton*

The mother of the writer descends from **Abraham Salle**, Manakintowne founder.

SALLE:

1. **Abraham I** (Son of **Jean and Marie** of the Isle of Re) m. 1699 **Olive Pereault** in London (will, 9 August, 1718). (THE HUGUENOT NO. 15.)

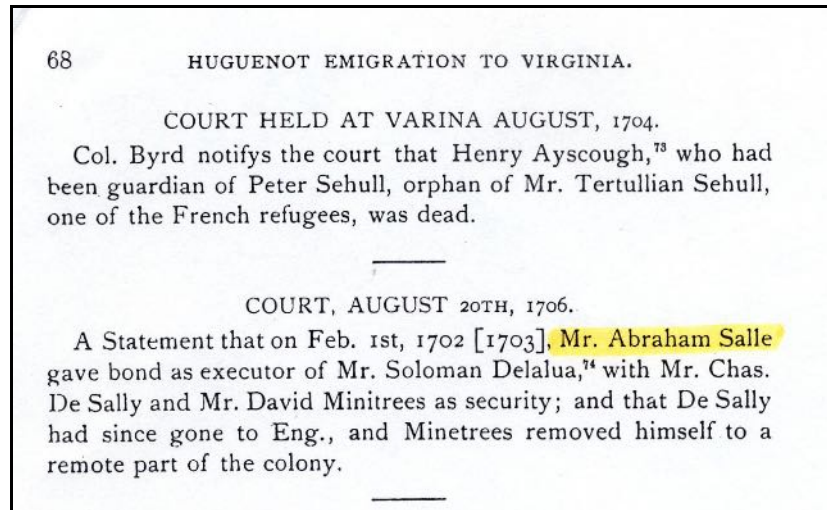
* Mr. Bolton is the author of The Pedigree of Henry Hardin Salle.

R. A. Brock, DOCUMENTS, CHIEFLY UNPUBLISHED, RELATING TO THE HUGUENOT EMIGRATION TO VIRGINIA AND TO THE SETTLEMENT AT MANAKIN-TOWN, 1979.

p. 68:

COURT, AUGUST 20th, 1706

A Statement that on Feb. 1st, 1702 [1703], **Mr. Abraham Salle** gave bond as executor of Mr. Soloman Delalua, (74) with Mr. Chas. DeSally and Mr. David Minitrees as security; and that De Sally had since gone to Eng., and Minetrees removed himself to a remote part of the colony.



p. 74:

LISTE GENERALE DE TOUS LES FRANCOIS PRETESTANTS REFUGIES, ESTABLIS DANS LA PAROISSE DU ROY GUILLAUME, COMTE D'HENRICO EN VIRGINIA, Y COMPRIS LES FEMMES, ENFANS, VEUSES, ET ORPHELINS.

Abraham Salle, Femmes:; Enfans: Garcons 5, Filles 1, Total: 7.

LISTE GENERALE DE TOUS LES FRANCOIS PROTESTANTS REFUGIES, ESTABLIS DANS LA PAROISSE DU ROY GUILLAUME, COMTE D'HENRICO EN VIRGINIA, Y COMPRIS LES FEMMES, ENFANS, VEUSES, ET ORPHELINS.⁷⁸

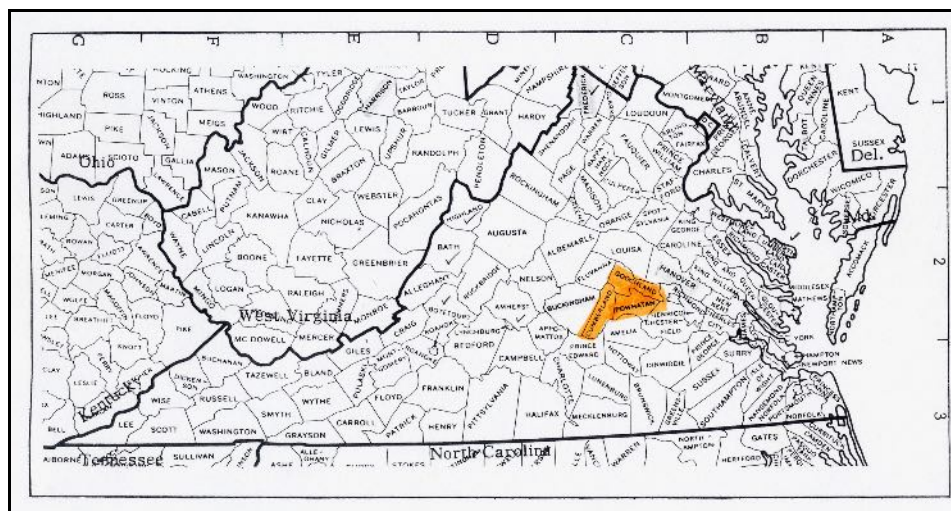
NOMS DES HOMMES.	Femmes.	ENFANS.		Total.
		Garçons.	Filles.	
Jean Cairon, Ministre ⁷⁹.....	....	3	....	4
Abraham Salle ⁸⁰.....	....	5	1	7
Pierre Chastain.....	I	2	4	8
Charles Perault.....	I	1	3	6
Jean Forquerand.....	I	2	....	4
Anthoine Matton.....	I	5	....	7
Isaac Lesebure.....	I	1	3	6
Jacques Bilbaud.....	I	1	....	3
Jacob Amonnet.....	....	3	2	6
Michel Cantepie.....	I	....	....	2
Jean Voyé.....	I	2	2	6
Francois Dupuy.....	I	....	1	3
Daniel Guerrand.....	I	2	2	6
Barthelemy Dupuy.....	I	3	2	7
Jacques Sobler.....	I	1	1	4
Pierre Trauve.....	I	1	1	4
Mathieu Agé.....	I	....	....	2
Thomas Briaus.....	I	2	3	7
Jean Chastain.....	I	....	....	2
Francois De Clapie.....	I	....	2	4
Louis Sobler.....	I	1	....	3
Tho. D'allizon.....	I	....	....	2
Pre. Dutoit.....	I	....	2	4
Jean Calver.....	I	3	2	7
Jean Farcy.....	I	3	....	5
Estienne Chastain.....	I	....	....	2
Estienne Bonard.....	I	2	1	5
Abra. Sobler, leuë.....	....	....	....	1
Abra. Sobler, le jeune.....	I	....	....	2
Gedeon Chambon.....	I	1	....	3
Pre. Morisser.....	I	1	3	6
31.....	27	45	35	138

⁷⁸ Extracted from *Papers Relating to the History of the Church in Virginia, A. D. 1650-1776* Edited by William Stevens Perry, D. D. Privately Printed 1870, pp. 193-195—where it is printed from the "Original MS." It is undated, but may be assigned to the period 1714.

⁷⁹ "Jean Cairon, né à Figeac, ci-devant ministre de Cajarc dans la Haute Guyenne, was one of the French pastors who in 1688 had taken refuge in Zurich." *Baird*, II, 145. His will is recorded in Henrico county court, February, 1715 [1716]. Sons: Peter, Daniel and Isaac.

⁸⁰ His will probated in Henrico county court, March, 1719 [1720].

Abraham Salle, Femmes.....Garçons 5, Filles 1, Total: 7



County Map of the State of Virginia

Bolton, Floyd B. 2957 Descendants of Abraham Salle and Olive Perault – Founders of Manakin Towne, Virginia, Hammond: Indiana, 1982.

p.1:

GENERATIONS I, II, III, IV

Abraham Salle was born at St. Martin, Ile de Re, Aunix, France, the son of **Jean and Marie Sallee** (Baird "Huguenot Emigration to America", I, 308). He was probably the most important member of the Huguenot colony at Manakintown. He was a merchant, was Clerk of King William Parish, a Captain of militia, and a Justice of Henrico Co., VA. (VM 2,5: 11, 294, 299; 12, 247; Va. Patent Bk. 10, 253). He first moved to New York, where he petitioned the Governor and Council for denization in 1700 (Baird I 308); and his two eldest sons by his wife, **Olive Perault**, were born there..... By Nov. 10, 1701, **Abraham Salle** had moved to Manakintown as the list of French refugees on that date shows.....(he) died in Manakintown in 1720 and his will (in addition to bequests to his six children) leaves to his heirs all his interest in the estates of his late father, mother, brother, sister, father-in-law and uncle in France or England....¹

Boddie's account is a convenient source for the vital statistics for the second and third generations of the family which follow.

- | | |
|-------------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. ABRAHAM SALLE | m. OLIVE PERAULT |
| 2. Abraham Salle | b. 3 Sep. 1700 |
| 3. Jacob Salle | b. 28 July 1701 |
| 4. Isaac Salle | b. 1703-4 |
| 5. William Sallee | b. 1706-7 |
| 6. Peter Salle | b. 1708-9 |

- 6. Peter SALLEE m. FRANCES BONDURANT**
 27. **Joseph Salle** b. 9 Mar 1746

 1 Boddie, John Bennett, Historical Southern Families, Vol. I pp 143-44
 Charles W. Baird, HISTORY OF THE HUGUENOT EMIGRATION TO AMERICA, Two Volumes in One. 1985.
 Vol. i, p. 308:
 Of the settlers of Manakintown, Virginia, Paul Bernard, Janvier, and **Abraham Salle** (5), were natives of Re.

(5) "**Abraham Salle**, son of **John Salle**, by **Mary** his wife: born at Saint Martins in France," petitioned the governor and council for denization (rights and privileges of citizenship), New York, 1700. The

children of **Abraham Salle** and **Olive Perault** his wife, baptized in the French Church, New York, were Abraham, born October 31, 1700, and Jacob, born July 28, 1701. Salle removed to Manakintown, Virginia.

HUGUENOT REFUGEES IN THE SETTLING OF COLONIAL AMERICA, Peter Steven Cannon, Editor, 1985.

p. 390: Chapter XIV: Why Huguenots Flocked to the Carolinas

Among the Huguenot refugees were:

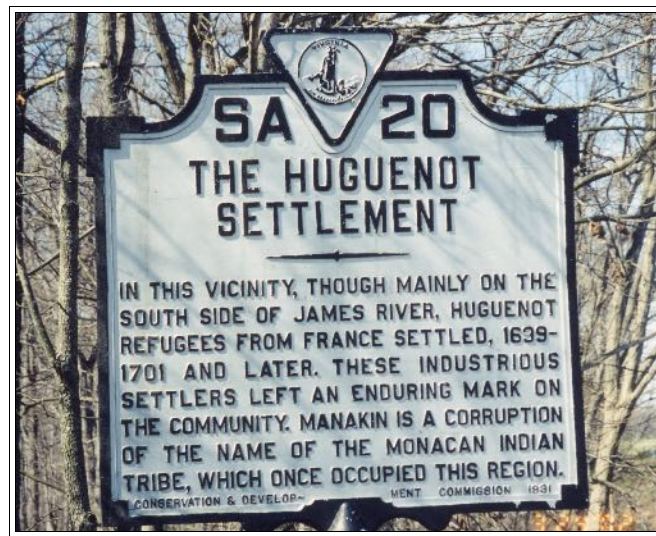
p. 395:

Salle, Pierre (Sailly): Bordeaux (Fr.); SC (before 1696); VA (1700); d. VA.

Louis H. Manarin and Clifford Dowdey, THE HISTORY OF HENRICO COUNTY. 1984.

p. 74:

In 1705 **Abraham Sallee** was added to the Henrico Co. Court as a magistrate for French refugees at Manakintown VA.



The Huguenot Settlement of Manakin east of Richmond, Virginia
Photographs taken by Mary Anne Curray, 2002



Manakin Ferry across the James River

Priscilla Harriss Cabell, TURFF & TWIGG, VOLUME ONE, THE FRENCH LANDS, A STUDY OF TEN THOUSAND ACRES DONATED BY KING WILLIAM, III TO THE FRENCH REFUGEES WHO SETTLED AT MANAKINTOWNE ON THE SOUTHERN BANK OF JAMES RIVER IN THE COLONY OF VIRGINIA IN 1700, 1988.

p. 24:

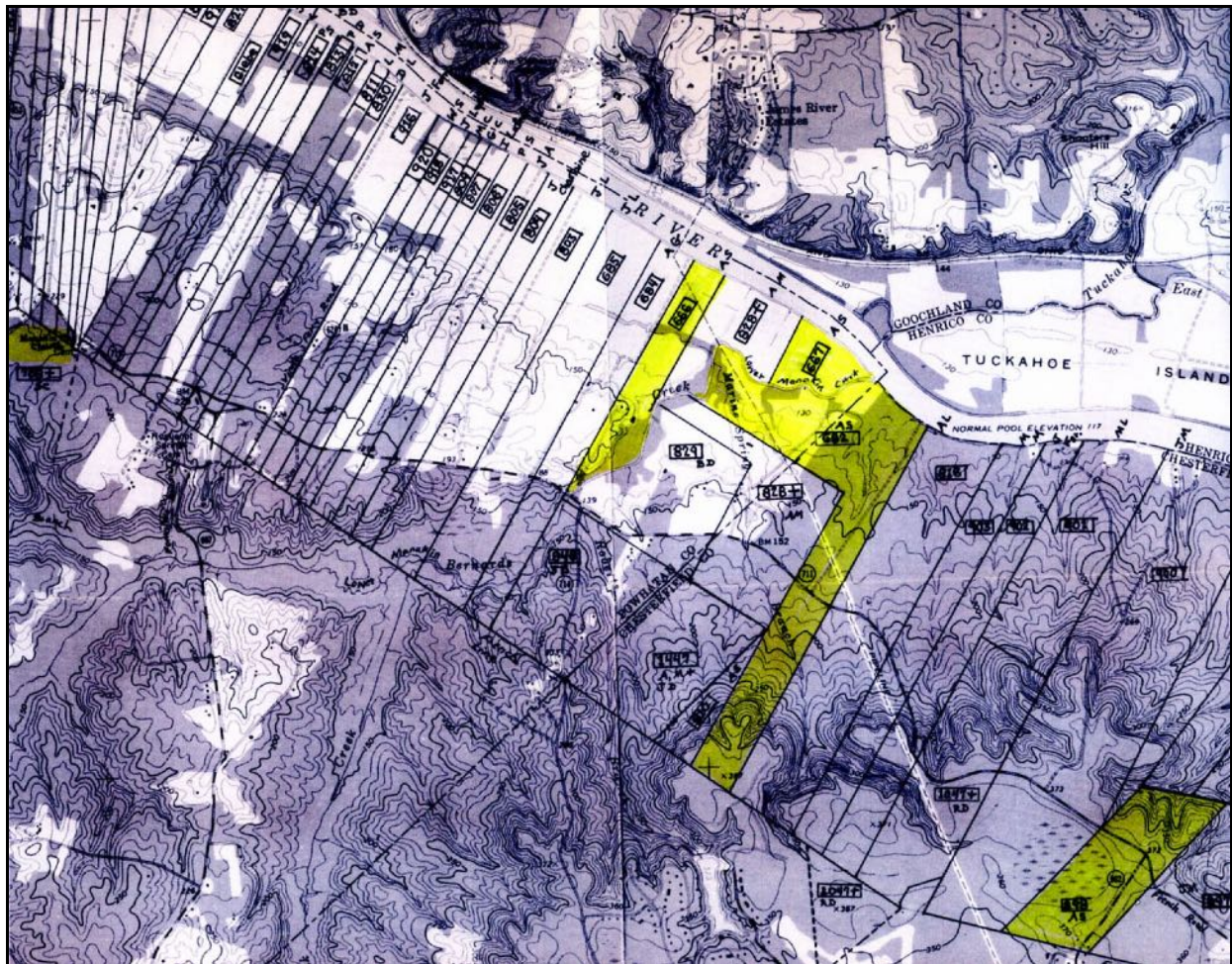
THE FRENCH LANDS – Alphabetically.

SALLEE, ABRAHAM, Patent #666, Map Location: G-21, p. 336

SALLEE, ABRAHAM, Patent #667, H-21, p. 336

SALLEE, ABRAHAM, Patent #682, I-22, p. 336

SALLEE, ABRAHAM, CAPTAIN, Patent #898, M-25, p. 336



Patents 667,667,682,& 898, French Lands granted to the French refugees, 1711-15
Turff & Twigg, Priscilla Harriss Cabell

p. 336:

Abraham Salle was a native of the Isle of Re which is just a short distance from La Rochelle, France. He was the son of **John Salle** and his wife **Mary**.

Salle first settled in New York where he petitioned for denization in the year 1700. He had married **Olive Perault** and their first two children were born in Europe and baptized in the French church in New York.

They were Abraham, born 31 October 1700, and Jacob who was born 28 July 1701. (1)

(1) Huguenot Emigration to America, Vol. I., p. 308. See page 344 for children.

Prior to 1 February 1702 (1703) Abraham and **Olive Salle** were living in Manakintowne in the colony of Virginia as proven in the following notation:

"COURT, AUGUST 20th, 1706.

A Statement that on Feb. 1st, 1702 [1703], **Abraham Salle** gave bond as executor of Mr. Solomon Delalua with Mr. Chas. De Sally and Mr. David Minitrees as security; and that De Sally had since gone to Eng., and Minitrees removed himself to a remote part of the colony."²

2. See Huguenot Emigration to Virginia, p. 68.

Abraham and **Olive Salle** had sons Abraham, Jr.; Jacob; Isaac; William and **Peter**. Their daughter was Olive Magdalene.

The patentee wrote his will in Henrico County on 9 August 1718; it was proven in March court of 1719. His wife **Olive** predeceased him, having died before the composition of the Liste Generale in 1714, on which list **Abraham** has recorded as a widower with five sons and a daughter. (3) **Olive (Perault) Salle's** connection, if any, with Charles **Perault**, the patentee is unknown to the author.

(3) Ibid., p. 74.

The first tithable list for the parish was made in 1710 and contained the name of **Salle** with a head count of two. The next year he was listed with Zefir, a Negro who was probably the same person with whom **Salle** had been paired for the previous year. This notation was repeated in 1712 but in 1713 Salle was listed alone. On the 1714 and 1715 lists a Negro named Aigy accompanied **Salle's** entry. By 1717 Abraham, Jr. began to be listed as a tithable. He was eligible for the previous year but there was no list for 1716. The 1719 list registered a group of nine for **Abraham Salle**. Aside from himself there was Abraham, Jr.; son Jacob Salle; James Reasider; William Gardiner; Bob, Aigy, French and Harry. The next year was 1720 and **Abraham, Sr.'s** name was omitted due to his death a few months before the list was composed. His son William emerged on the 1723 list for the first time, followed in 1724 by his brother **Peter**. (4)

(4) Vestry Book of King William Parish

The eldest son Abraham, Jr. married ca 1720 Magdalene Amonet who was probably one of the daughters of Jacob Amonet, patentee of French land. They had six children; three children have extant birth records: Judith, born 9 November 1726 and Elizabeth, born 13 March 1728 who was baptized by Mr. Swift. This was doubtless The Reverend William Swift who had land patents in western Goochland County among a cluster of families from Hanover and New Kent Counties.

p. 337:

The third child was a record of birth was Mariane who was a posthumous child born on 20 August 1731. She married Charles Clarke who was deeded part of the French lands and also had his own patent on the Old Buckingham Road in Powhatan County. The other three, children of Abraham and Magdalene were Abraham, III.; Olive and Magadelene.

Jacob, son of **Abraham** and **Olive (Perault) Salle**, died unmarried in 1720 at the age of eighteen or nineteen, having ceased being a tithable at this time.

Isaac, son of **Abraham** and **Olive**, became a tithable on the 1720 list, placing his birth in 1703 or 1704. He died within the year following February 1729/30, at which time he was a godfather to his brother

William's daughter, having been designated as deceased in his brother Abraham's will which he wrote in February 1730/31.

William Salle, son of **Abraham** and **Olive**, was born between 1705 and 1707. As there was no tithable list for the years 1721 and 1722 the time of his sixteenth birthday is nebulous. William married twice, his first wife assumed to be Elizabeth Gevaudan, daughter of Anthony Gevaudan, patentee of French land. (See Gevaudan, Anthony). William and Elizabeth Salle had five children. After Elizabeth's death which followed soon after the birth of her last child in July 1739, William Salle married Mary Amgdelene Chastain, daughter of Peter Chastain, patentee, and Anne (Soblet) who was presumed to be his first wife and the mother of his children. William Sallee and Magdalene joined in a deed in 1750 (Cumb. DB 1/151) in which they sold property she had inherited from here father, Peter Chastain. This was not French land.
8

William Sallee and his second wife Mary Magdalene had four children: His second son named Isaac, born in 1741; Peter, born in 1743; John, born in 1745; Olive, born in 1749. 9

Peter Salle, youngest son of Abraham and Olive ...
(see **4 Jean Pierre Perrault SALLEE** which follows)...

p. 338:

...

Olive Magdalen Salle, daughter of **Abraham Salle**, the immigrant and his wife **Olive**, married Stephen Mallet, Jr. and had the following issue: Marie, 1730; Stephen, 1731; William, 1734; Judith, 1736; Ester, 1738; Elizabet, 1741; Marie Magdelaine, 1742.

Abraham Salle had four French patents. His grandson Abraham, III., son of Abraham, Jr., had a tiny French patent (810) for 30 acres issued in 1751; he also had a patent in the western part of Powhatan County which he received in 1746.

Abstract of the will of **ABRAHAM SALLE**,

p. 339:

Regarding the land bequests in the above will:

Abraham received part of (682) **Abraham Sallee**.

Jacob received the balance of (682) **Abraham Sallee**.

Isaac received (666) **Abraham Sallee**.

William received (667) **Abraham Sallee**.

Peter received (898) **Abraham Salle, (Captain)**.

Patent (666) **SALLEE, ABRAHAM** 23 March 1715

55 acres #10/282 NEW Map Location: G-21

On the south side of the James River in Henrico Co. (now Powhatan): Beginning at a hickory standing on the river parting Anthony Gevodan and the said Sallee thence S 35 W 286 poles to a white oak standing on the south side of Manakin Lower Creak by the cole pit road thence down the creek 184 poles to a white oak standing on the said creek thence N 35 E 186 poles to a corner mulberry standing on the river thence up the river 42 poles to the place begun at. Part of the first 5,000 acres granted to the French refugees.

Note: The cole pit road would have been about 300 feet south of Rt. 711 and opposite the month of Roberts Branch.

p. 340:

Progression of (666)

- I. **ABRAHAM SALLE** by will to son ISAAC SALLE
- II. ISAAC SALE by estate to brother ABRAHAM SALLEE
- III. ABRAHAM SALLE by estate to son ABRAHAM SALLE, (III)
- IV. ABRAHAM SALLEE, (III) and ELIZABETH his wife of King Williams Parish, Cumberland Co. to BENJAMIN HARRIS of same

(Progression continues)

p. 342:

Patent (667) **SALLEE, ABRAHAM** 23 March 1715

57 acres #10/282 NEW Map Location: H-22

On the south side of the James River in Henrico Co. (not Powhatan): Beginning at a corner locust standing on the river parting Abraham Misshuex and said Sallee running thence on Misshuex S 33 W 88 poles to a currant tree standing on the west side of Lower Manakin Creek thence down the creek 140 poles to the mouth of the said creek to the river thence up the river 108 poles to the place begun at. Part of the first 5,000 acres granted to the French refugees.

Progression of (667)

- I. **ABRAHAM SALLE** by will to son WILLIAM SALE
- II. WILLIAM SALE of Goochland Co. to JOSEPH MAYOR of Henrico Co.

Progression continues)

p. 344:

Patent (682) **SALLEE, ABRAHAM** 19 December 1711

232 acres #10/42 NEW Map Location: I-22

On the south side of the James River in Henrico Co. (now in Powhatan and Chesterfield Counties, the majority being in Chesterfield): Beginning at an ash on the bank of the James River S 35 W 416 poles thence W 40 N 58 poles thence N 35 E 358 poles to John March's corner ¹³ thence on him W 40 N 184 poles to the Lower Manocan Creek thence down the creek to the James River and down the river to the beginning.

13 John Marche was living on land which later became (828) Abraham Misshuex (1715).

Note: This survey does not end with the usual "part of the first 5,000 acres granted to the French refugees." It was the first patent to be issued for land within the French bounds since William Byrd's in 1704, which was not technically included in the computation of the acreage for the territory. There was not another patent issued within the French bounds for three years after this patent of Sallee's, the next being Isaac Lafeit's tract in December 1714. In addition, this patent of **Sallee's** was awarded on the basis of headrights: 50 acres for each person whose transportation to this country had been provided by the patentee. **Sallee** listed his family as headrights: **Abraham Sallee**, (himself); **Oliver Sallee**, (his wife **Olive**); and his two sons Abraham, Jr. and Jacob. These facts indicate that this tract was not technically part of the King's donation to the French refugees, but this fact was not brought out in the meeting of the Council (see first page under Jones, John) in 1704 that occurred seven years prior to **Sallee's** patent. The conclusion is that it was definitely French land but was not treated as such.

An important point raised in the listing of headrights for this patent is that the first two sons of **Abraham and Olive Salle** were apparently not born in New York as every source definitely states, these births occurring before the family removed to Manakintowne. Obviously, these two children were born before arriving in this country. Sometimes immigrants would sail to these shores and then return to England or elsewhere, coming once again to this country, but it does not seem feasible that **Salle** took his family from New York, back across the Atlantic, after having made a safe departure from Europe as refugees, and then back again to this country. It appears he did arrive in New York with his wife and two sons. If baptismal records for the children exist in a French church in New York as has been said, it seems

evident that their baptisms were delayed until they were safely in this country.

p. 345:

Progression of (682):

Northern portion with all of riverfront.

I.

A. **ABRAHAM SALLE** by will to son ABRAHAM SALLE

1. **ABRAHAM SALLE** by will to son ABRAHAM SALLE, (III)

p. 346:

(682) continued:

Southern end with a strip running west to the creek.

I.

B. **ABRAHAM SALLE** by will to son JACOB SALLE

1. JACOB SALLE by estate to brother ABRAHAM SALLE

p. 367:

PATENT (898) **SALLEE, ABRAHAM, (CAPTAIN)** 23 March 1715

133 acres #10/253 NEW Map Location: M-25

On the south side of the James River in Henrico Co. (now Chesterfield): Beginning at a black oak thence S 45 W 236 poles to a white oak thence E 12 S 116 poles to a white oak and a red oak thence N 45 E 236 poles to a black oak thence W 12 N 116 poles to the place begun at. Part of the lower part of the first 5,000 acres.

Note: The N 45 E 236 pole line, which is the eastern boundary, is part of the line dividing the power part of the first 5,000 acres from the lower part of the last 5,000 acres which begins east of this patent.

p. 368:

Progression of (898):

I. **ABRAHAM SALLE** by will to son **PETER SALLE**

133 acres w.w. 9 August 1718 w.p. March 1719.

II. **PETER SALLE** of Goochland Co. to JAMES MARTIN, "an infant," son of JAMES MARTIN of King William Parish, Henrico Co.

133 acres 9 June 1734 10 pounds

VESTRY BOOK OF KING WILLIAM PARISH, VIRGINIA 1701-1750, 1988.

p. vii:

Descendants of the Manakin Huguenots will be happy to know that the original of this Vestry Book has been beautifully restored and is now safely kept in the rare books section of the Virginia Historical Society Library.

p. viii:

The Manakin Church Register (baptisms, marriages, burials, etc.) for the early years of the congregation is now in the possession of the Henry E. Huntington Library, San Marino, California.

The first two church buildings were located near the bluff of the James River and east of the Monacan Farm home as it now stands.

p. xii:

Other plaques in the new church commemorate the Huguenot settlers:**Abraham Salle**....

p. 11-289 to 11-32, 12-17-:

Many references to **Abraham Sallee** as a member of the Vestry.

p. 11-293-294:

PREFATORY NOTE.

THE REGISTER OF THE HUGUENOT CHURCH AT MANAKINTOWN ON JAMES RIVER, 1707-1750.

Many clergymen ministered to the spiritual needs of the parish during these years; but only four clerks appear in the record, viz: Etienne Reynaud to 1715, **Abraham Salle** to April, 1720,....

p. 11-197, 11-299, 11-436, 12-19:

Mr. Abraham Salle, Justice of the Peace for Her Majesty.

p. 11-301-302:

LIST OF TITHABLE PERSONS, 1710:

...

Abra. Salle, 2

p. 11-296:

1707

_____for **Mr. Salle** for a register for the vestry and paper, 0 pounds, 12 shillings

p. 11-304:

List of tithable persons, in order to pay five months and fifteen days services of Mr. Phillippe:

Abraham Salle, 2

Zefir, negro,

p. 11-430-431:

List of tithable persons of the present year 1711, in order to pay the six and one-half months of service and other expenses:

Abraham Salle, 2

Zefir, negro,

p. 11-434-435:

LIST OF TITHABLES FOR THE YEAR 1712:

Abra. Salle, 2

Zefrir, negro,

p. 11-439:

LIST OF TITHABLES FOR THE CURRENT YEAR 1713:

Abraham Salle, 1

p. 12-19:

LIST OF TITHABLE PERSONS FOR THE PRESENT YEAR, 1714:

Abra. Salle, 2

Aigy, negro

p. 12-21:

LIST OF TITHABLES FOR THE PRESENT YEAR 1715:

Abra. Salle, 2

Aigy, negro,

p. 12-27:

LIST OF TITHABLES FOR THE PRESENT YEAR, 1717:

Abra. Salle, Sr., 4

Abra. Salle, Jr.,

John Cook,

Aigy,

p. 12-31:

_____to **Mr. Abraham Salle** for advance, 0 pounds, 18 shillings, 3 d.

_____for his year 1719, to end of November, as clerk, 6 pounds

p. 12-32:

1719. List of tithables of King Williams parish for the present year 1719, taxed at one and one-half bushels of wheat each:

Abraham Salle, Sen., 9 13 ½ bushels of wheat

Abraham Salle, Jun.,

Jacob Salle,

James Reasider,

Wm Gardiner,

Bob, Aigy, French, Harry,

COLONIAL WILLS OF HENRICO COUNTY, VIRGINIA, PART ONE 1654-1737, Abstracted and
Compiled by Benjamin B. Weisiger, III.

p. 513:

Will of **Abraham Salle**, late of St. Martin Island, in Province of Aunin in France, at present in Parish of King William, Henrico Co., Va.

To son Abraham, 100 acres on plantation where I live with all housesp; also negroes, with any children of same to my daughter Olive Magdalen Salle at age 21

To son Jacob, 132 acres of land belonging to above from Great Monacantown Lower Creek and from Abraham Michaux's line to the Little Creek, and a negro man

To son Isaac, one plantation between Abraham Michaux and Antahony Givandan; and one negro

To son William, one plantation between Abraham Michaux and Monacantown Lower Creek

To son **Peter**, 133 acres behind plantation of Abraham Remy and Anthony Trabue; and 1 negro at age 21

To daughter Olive Magdalen Salle, items (including silver) and Pounds 60.

My estate if any, in England, France or elsewhere to be equally divided among my children.

Abraham, Jacob, and Isaac to be free the day of my death and they to be executors.

Dated 9 Aug. 1718

Wit: J. Amonett, Rene Laforce, John Barnett

Recorded March 1719.

Bolton, Floyd B. 2957 Descendants of Abraham Salle and Olive Perault & Founders of Manakin Towne, Virginia, Hammond: Indiana, 1982, p. 1.

GENERATIONS I, II, III, IV

Abraham Sallé was born at St. Martin, Ile de Re, Aunich, France, the son of Jean and Marie Sallé (Baird "Huguenot Emigration to America", I, 308). He was probably the most important member of the Huguenot colony at Manakintown. He was a merchant, was Clerk of King William Parish, a Captain of militia, and a Justice of Henrico Co., VA. (VM 2,5; 11, 294, 299; 12, 247; Va. Patent Bk. 10, 253). He first moved to New York, where he petitioned the Governor and Council for denization in 1700 (Baird I 308); and his two eldest sons by his wife, Olive Perault, were born there..... By Nov. 10, 1701, Abraham Sallé had moved to Manakintown as the list of French refugees on that date shows.....(he) died in Manakintown in 1720 and his will (in addition to bequests to his six children) leaves to his heirs all his interest in the estates of his late father, mother, brother, sister, father-in-law and uncle in France or England....¹

Boddie's account is a convenient source for the vital statistics for the second and third generations of the family which follow.

- | | | | |
|----|------------------------|----|---------------|
| 1. | ABRAHAM SALLÉ | m. | OLIVE PERAULT |
| 2. | Abraham Sallé | b. | 3 Sep. 1700 |
| 3. | Jacob Sallé | b. | 28 July 1701 |
| 4. | Isaac Sallé | b. | 1703 - 4 |
| 5. | William Sallé | b. | 1706 - 7 |
| 6. | Peter Sallé | b. | 1708 - 9 |
| 7. | Olive Magdaleine Sallé | b. | 1710 - 11 |

1. Boddie, John Bennett, Historical Southern Families, Vol. I pp 143-44

Ancestry.com, Mercer County, Ky Families, Paula Rohde <paulasrohde@prodigy.net>

ID: I282

He was probably the most important member of the Huguenot colony at Manakintown, He was a merchant, a Clerk of King William Parish, a Captain of militia and a Justice of Henrico County VA.

Correspondence from Jack D. Bailey, 527 Scenic Hills, Harrodsburg KY 40330, (859)734-7174.

p. 5:

Many reports I have received through the years have **Abraham** with the title of "Marquis" and Charles de Saily as "Duke." One report has Charles' middle name as Perrault. I have found no proof whatsoever that **Abraham** was a Marquis, nor that Charles de Saily was a Duke, nor that Charles' middle name was Perrault. Someone in the past wanted to exaggerate their heritage beyond recognition! But, unfortunately, pasted this information down to every **Sallee** family across the country. I have also a report that says "they had previously fled to Switzerland to escape the persecution of the French Catholics," but I have never seen any proof of that either.

THE HUGUENOT SOCIETY OF THE FOUNDERS OF MANAKIN IN THE COLONY OF VIRGINIA:
VA #4659 -S -**Abraham Sallee**.



Huguenot Society Founders of Manakin Virginia

Register of Qualified Huguenot Ancestors of the National Huguenot Society, Fourth Edition, 1995,
Compiled by Arthur Louis Finnell, Registrar General.

p. 224:

ABRAHAM SALLE/SALLEE


son of **Jean and Marie (Martin) Salle** of Courteil, Mougou Parish, Poitou
bp. 25 Feb 1674, St Martin, Isle de Re, France
d. wp.30 Apr 1720, Manakintown, Goochland Co, VA
m. 1699, London, England to Olive Perrault
Came to New York and later to Manakin, VA.

CHILDREN:

.....

PETER; b. 1708/09, Manakin, VA

The Huguenot Society
of the
Founders of Manakin in the Colony of Virginia

1699  1922


This Certifies that

Mary Anne Curtis Curray

is a regularly approved member of The Huguenot Society of the Founders of Manakin in the Colony of Virginia, having been admitted by the National Board of Management by virtue of descent from

Abraham Sallee

who with the gallant Marquis Oliver de la Pluce and his assistant Charles de Saily, was a founder of Manakintowne.

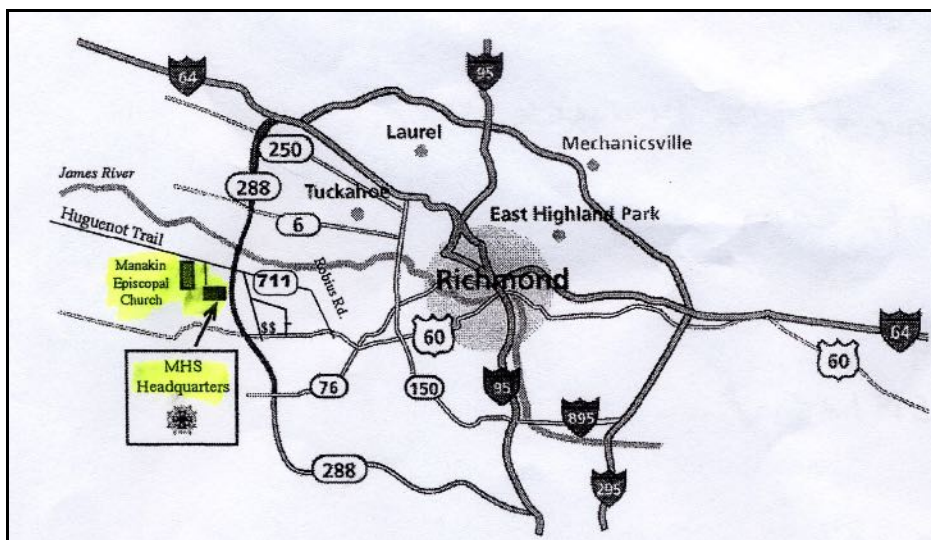
 Given under our hand and the seal of the Huguenot Society this 7th day of May .2004

National President Aline W. Gray Roberts

National No. 4659-S National Secretary Lillian Bordurant McKay Ferrar

Admitted 5/7/04 National Registrar Margie Jackson Stewart

THE HUGUENOT SOCIETY OF THE FOUNDERS OF MANAKIN IN THE COLONY OF VIRGINIA:
#4659 -S -Abraham Sallee

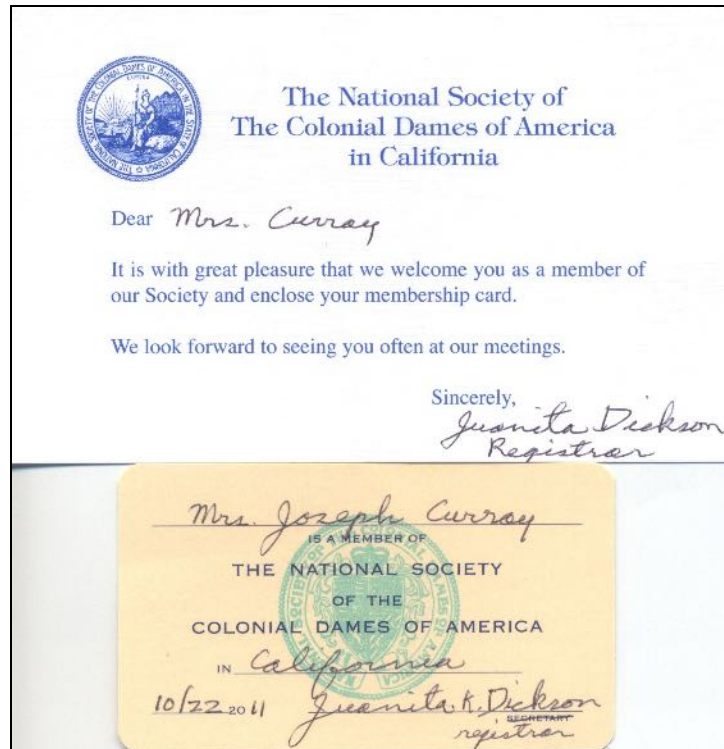


Map to Huguenot Society Headquarters
 981 Huguenot Trail, Midlothian VA 23113
<http://manakin.addr.com>
 804-794-5702
manakintown@yahoo.com



Huguenot Monument and Original Huguenot Church Built in 1700
 Huguenot Trail, Midlothian VA

The National Society of the Colonial Dames of America in The Commonwealth of Virginia, Descent from **Abraham Sallee**, Colonial State: Virginia, No. 6943A; Associate State: California, No. 1802.



Spouse: **Olive PERAULT/PEROE**, 6G Grandmother
 Birth: 1675, France
 Death: will proven 27 Nov 1714, King William Parish, Henrico Co VA
 Marr: 1699, London, England

Children: Abraham (1700-)
 Jacob (1701-1720)
 Isaac (1703-1729)
 William (1705-)
Jean Pierre Perrault (1708-1752)
 Olive Madaleine (~1710-)

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

ALEXANDER SPOTSWOOD
VA
Ancestor of Laura Todd

Alexander Spotswood was born in 1676 on the African side of the Strait of Gibraltar, where his father was Surgeon of the British garrison at strategic Tangier. When he was eleven, his father died.

In 1693, during the war with France, he was commissioned Ensign in the Earl of Bath's regiment. At that war's end, he was ordered to Ireland in 1698, but with the outbreak of Queen Anne's War (the War of the Spanish Succession), he was in Flanders, where he rose to Lieutenant Colonel. At age 27 he was made Lieutenant Quartermaster General to all English forces in the Netherlands.

On the ship Deptford, Alexander Spotswood sailed to Virginia in 1710, arriving June 21. Williamsburg, the capital, was a drowsy country town with the half-built College of William and Mary. The capital would become a handsome city in the twelve years of Spotswood's governorship. In 1720 the elegant governor's mansion (called the Palace) would be completed. In 1716, Spotswood led an exploration over the Appalachian mountains, over the Blue Ridge barrier, with 63 men and 74 horses- a project to open a doorway for growth and destiny of the Virginia colony. In 1722, after twelve years in office, Spotswood was replaced as Lieutenant Governor by Colonel Hugh Drysdale.

In 1724 Spotswood went to England and stayed for six years. He married Anne Butler Brayne, God-daughter of the Duke of Ormond. Two sons and two daughters were born in the next six years. In 1729 he returned to Virginia with his family to his sizable Spotsylvania holdings, of 57 plantations and a total of 83,000 acres. His seat was "Germana" on the Rapidan River. In 1732 Spotswood was appointed Deputy Postmaster General for the colonies. In 1737 he appointed young Benjamin Franklin Postmaster of Philadelphia. In 1739 he sold his Spotsylvania estate (probably to give his children more education than the frontier could provide).

In 1739 England declared war on Spain and Spotswood responded; he proposed to recruit a regiment of volunteers in the American colonies. He was commissioned Brig. General. In 1740 he was in Williamsburg, equipping his troops and preparing for a campaign in Colombia. The estate remained unsold. He made a will leaving most of his estate to his son John. All of his books, maps and mathematical instruments were left to the College of William and Mary.



GOVENOR ALEXANDER SPOTSWOOD
College of William and Mary, Williamsburg VA

His will was signed 19 April 1740. Two weeks later he voyaged to Annapolis to consult with officials before embarking his regiment for Cartagena. In Annapolis he fell ill and died in a few days on 7 June 1740, at age 64. The Spotswood coat of arms motto is "Patior ut patiar." "I endure that I may secure."

Reference:

Havihurst, Walter. *Alexander Spotswood, Portrait of a Governor*, Colonial Williamsburg, Inc., 1967

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

WILLIAM TRIGG I
VA
Ancestor of Marykay Jones Pflum Burch

In 1909, a woman's application for membership in the Daughters of the American Revolution listed many of her ancestors prior to William Trigg II, the colonel who distinguished himself in that noble war. From those papers I learned that my NSCDA ancestor, William Trigg 1 had descended from a long line of Triggs, when three generations before, Samuel Trigg came from Cornwall, England in 1635 to James City, Virginia. His son Daniel begot Abraham Trigg who married Judith Clarke and was the father of William Trigg I. The family eventually settled in Bedford, Virginia where the names of many Triggs are inscribed in the register of Christ Church.

William Trigg I, born May 18, 1716, in Middlesex County, Virginia married Mary Johns in 1641. He was appointed county judge in 1762. His will, probated in Bedford County Will Book A, page 167, reads: "In the name of God, Amen. I, William Trigg, being in a weak and loe state of health, but in perfect sence and memory, thanks to Almighty God " (sic), etc. Whereupon, he lists the inheritance left to his many daughters and sons, three of whom served in the Revolutionary War as high ranking officers under George Washington at the battle of Yorktown. These three sons, having learned something of the law from their father's knowledge and teaching, served in the Virginia House of Delegates and the Continental Congress, which ratified the Constitution in 1788, from 1784 until 1809. Another son, one of the founders of the City of Louisville, died in one of the last battles of the Revolutionary War, fighting Indians with Daniel Boone. Trigg County, Kentucky was named in his honor.

It goes without saying that I know my ancestor, William Trigg 1 mostly through the accomplishments of his children who copied their father's life as public servants. The name " Trigg" originates in Norway in 995 when King Olaf I, Tryggva son, (Son of Trygg) after making peace with the English, brought to Norway the Christian religion that would end the Viking Age. His method of replacing Viking paganism with Christianity was to give Norway's inhabitants a choice between death and baptism. After Olaf I's death, Olaf II became St. Olaf of the Catholic Church which consolidated the faith until the Norwegian church became a branch of Lutheranism during the Reformation.

The name Tryggve changed gradually by the English branch to Trigg and is one of the oldest in recorded history, appearing in Norse sagas, and is derived from the Gothic word meaning true and faithful. As a first or second given name it has been used in my family up to the present day by my grandson, Trigg.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony

JOHN WEST
VA
Ancestor of Patricia Fleming

In Virginia John West (1590-1659) was a member of the King's Council for 29 years from 1630 to 1659 and Governor of Jamestowne from 1635-1637.

Born in, Hampshire, England, he was the twelfth child and fifth son of Sir Thomas West, Second Lord De La Warr and Lady Anne Knollys. He received his Bachelor of Arts degree at Magdalen College, Oxford University, in 1613. In 1618 he immigrated to Virginia on the *Bonny Bess* with his brothers, Thomas West, 3rd Baron De La Warr; Francis West; and Nathaniel West. From his time of arrival in the colony, he was associated with the military commanding a company against the Indians. He was also a member of the House of Burgesses from 1628-1630, Justice of York County in 1634 and Governor of Jamestowne from 1635-1637. In 1637 he was commissioned Muster Master General of the colony by King Charles.

When it was decided in 1630 to establish a settlement on the York River, John West was among the first to patent lands. After selling this land in 1650, he moved to the fork of the York River on the site of the present town of West Point, Virginia where he established a plantation of 6,000 acres. He died there in 1659. During his lifetime, Governor West accumulated several thousand acres along the river, granted to him for bringing new settlers to Virginia in his ships. (At the time it was customary to grant 50 acres for each person brought in.)

John West married Anne Claiborne in 1632. Their son, also named John West (1632-1689), was the first child of European descent born on the York River. He lived on the plantation at West Point and served as Captain, Major and Lieutenant Colonel in the militia. He was also a senior justice of New Kent and served in the House of Burgesses for New Kent from 1680-82 and 1684-86.

Two older brothers also became Governors of Virginia. One, Sir Thomas West (1577-1618), third Lord De La Warr, Lord Governor and Captain General of Virginia is credited with saving the fledgling colony from abandonment when his ship arrived with fresh supplies in June 1610. Francis West, another older brother, was injured in his thigh by an arrow in a skirmish with the Indians. He was Governor from 1627-1629.

Return to San Diego Book of Ancestors

Return to Biographies Listed by Colony